

# **HOW TO RESIST THE DEVIL SO HE WILL FLEE**

**A FIELD MANUAL FOR DELIVERANCE**



**GET FREE & STAY FREE!**

**Bob Lucy**

**[www.boblucyministries.org](http://www.boblucyministries.org)**

How to Resist the Devil So He Will Flee, © Copyright 2024 by Bob Lucy,  
P.O. Box 58, Coles Point, VA 22442.

1st Edition Revised © October 2025 by Bob Lucy Ministries.  
All rights reserved.

All scripture quotations except where noted are taken from the HOLY BIBLE, NEW INTERNATIONAL VERSION ®. Copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984 by International Bible Society. Used by permission of Zondervan Publishing House. All rights reserved.

Where noted, Scripture taken from the New King James Version ®. Copyright © 1982 by Thomas Nelson. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Where noted, Scripture quotations taken from the Amplified® Bible (AMP), Copyright © 2015 by The Lockman Foundation. Used by permission. [lockman.org](http://lockman.org)

Satan and other false deities, religions, and entities are not capitalized herein, (except when directly quoting Scriptures), to avoid any appearance of honor or respect.

Cover graphic by Dr. Mark Virkler.

Printed in the United States of America.  
Barbour Printing Services, Inc.  
206 Prince St, Tappahannock, VA 22560

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	<u>Preface</u> by Bob Lucy.....	5
	<u>Acknowledgments</u> .....	7
	<u>Foreword</u> by Dr. Mark Virkler.....	11
1	<u>The Ways of the Lord and the Requirements of Our God</u> .....	15
2	<u>Generational Curses and Sins of the Bloodline</u> .....	35
3	<u>Soul Ties</u> .....	47
4	<u>Freemasonry</u> .....	61
5	<u>Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy</u> .....	85
6	<u>Ungodly Beliefs and Thought Processes</u> .....	101
7	<u>Personal Sin</u> .....	125
8	<u>Alter Personalities</u> .....	161
9	<u>Refinement and Renewal of the Mind</u> .....	199
10	<u>Preparing Your Environment and Reclaiming Your Territory</u> .....	213
11	<u>Maintaining Your Newfound Identity in Christ After Deliverance</u> ....	229
12	<u>Description of Ministry Procedures (Extended and Shortened)</u> .....	249
<u>Appendix I</u>	<u>All Prayers and Application for Ministry</u> .....	267

## Relevant Scriptures

### We follow Christ's pattern

Acts 10:38 "...how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him."

### How Paul explained total surrender to Christ

Galatians 2:20 "I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me."

### Paul's warning of our struggles

Ephesians 6:10-12 "Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms."

### Jesus teaching us about our Authority

Luke 10:18-19 "He replied, 'I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you.'"

### Jesus teaches us to apply received Authority

Mark 16:17-18b "And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well."

## Preface

In the early 1990's, I became frustrated and exhausted while serving as a minister. I felt "burned out." Believing God's Word, I wanted to experience His healing power for the people of the congregation. Yet I never saw anyone healed by the laying on of hands and anointing with oil in the Name of the Lord. The Word did not appear to be active and alive in those areas. People would come for prayer week after week with the same problems. During those many months, I agreed with them in prayer, but nothing happened. They could not overcome. I anointed them with oil and believed for healing, but they were unable to receive from God. I had faith for their healing and deliverance, but they remained sick, defeated, or mentally frazzled.

I was asked to preach on **James 4:7**, "**Submit yourselves then to God, resist the devil and he will flee from you.**" The enemy was not "fleeing" from me or the people in the congregation. I was discouraged, frustrated, and very angry with the Lord.

As I contended with Him about this, the Lord spoke a Rhema word to me, "**You can resist the devil all you want so that he will flee, but if he has a right to be there, he will not leave.**" With this revelation, the Lord transformed me. It was a radical moment. I had sought the Lord, and He revealed this truth.

God enabled me to study the Word with renewed purpose and direction: to find out what legal rights the enemy could have to steal our covenant promises to be healed, delivered, or renewed. From Genesis to Revelation, the Lord revealed His ways, His requirements, and the areas in which the enemy can retain legal rights to bind us.

God taught me new things through His anointing, which is Christ in us. (I John 2:27: "**As for you, the anointing you received from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit – just as it has taught you, remain in him.**")

This book is a culmination of years of study, refinement, experience, and testing. The Lord's anointing taught me these principles. I rejoice in the victorious testimonies of healing and deliverance. I pray you will apply these principles to your life and receive the blessings of the Lord. Some Scriptures in this book are fully written out and some are not. I encourage anyone who reads this book to take your time and use it as a study. Scripture that is not written out, I encourage you to look up and read, even to underline and highlight. Your Bible is a living and working instrument to empower you, wash you, and it teaches us how to be holy. As you study and seek God through the Scriptures, make sure you search and study with a purpose. What do you need, and what area are you troubled in? Just as I sought the Lord on legal rights the enemy acquires to steal our inheritance, please do the same to get what you need.

Most chapters of this book are areas in our lives that can be contaminated and stolen by the enemy. This occurs mostly because of perishing for a lack of knowledge. The enemy can only steal from us if we allow him to. As we learn to apply proper redemption of these areas, we become free. The Lord will reveal these contaminated areas in Scripture. As we repent of these shortcomings of His ways, these areas become redeemed. Then as we no

longer perish for a lack of knowledge in these areas, we are able to release them and experience freedom and keep it in Jesus' Mighty Name.

I encourage any individual who is curious about deliverance or just hungry for the deeper things of God to study this book. There are things written under the anointing that will teach us all how to learn to resist the devil so that he will flee and break legal rights to him. Whether you are a believer or an unbeliever in Christ as the risen savior, the Lamb of God that was slain for our sin, there is something in this book for everyone.

The individuals who will receive the most from this teaching are the ones who have said the 5 most important words that any person can ever say. These words are: **"JESUS COME INTO MY HEART."** This opens our spiritual minds and insight to more understand the deeper things of God.

**Galatians 3:29 "If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise."**

This gives us the ability to receive healing, freedom, deliverance, and renewal of the mind. Under the covenant of inviting Christ into our lives we are no longer blinded to the things of God, but able to believe, understand, and receive them. This statement breaks the biblical principal of blindness from unbelief.

**2nd Corinthians 4:4 "The God of this age (satan) has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God."**

After speaking out these important five words, we come under covenant to receive these promises through empowerment and understanding his ways and requirements, we can receive why Christ came. To take away the sin of the world, and to have life to the full and more abundantly.

**John 10:10 "The thief comes only to steal, kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full."**

Ponder and consider how many millions of people believe Jesus is the savior of the World yet they have not invited him in. These individuals may have spent their entire lives going to church and are familiar with the presence of God yet have never said these five words. The spirit of God and his empowerment will not enter us unless we ask. He is a gentleman and will not surpass our free will. We are required to speak out our desire for him with our mouth.

**Romans 10: 9-10 "That if you confess with your mouth, 'Jesus is Lord,' and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you confess and are saved."**

I strongly encourage any professing Christian who does not remember asking Jesus into your heart to do so. Profess with your mouth that you believe. It may be the empowerment that you need to overcome lingering strongholds in your life.

## Acknowledgments

As I complete this last task for the book, my heart floods with thoughts of appreciation as I remember the many people that have helped during and through this process. Some have encouraged me through the years or have invested financially to help carry me along. Others have teamed up with me in learning the anointing of the ministry of Deliverance. They have welcomed me into their homes, fed and housed me many times in many different states. The physical areas where I have ministered are different, but the anointing of deliverance and freedom is the same. Many people were interested in learning about the Rhema Word I received from the Lord in the beginning. “You can resist the devil all you want so that he will flee, but if he has a right to be there, he will not leave”. This word from God created the ministry in me and revealed a large part of his call on my life. It was such a blunt, common-sense statement that I understood and studied the rights to the enemy in scriptures for years.

I’m also thankful to the individuals who called in need of ministry. This is how I learned through the anointing the depth of deception and the layers of contamination that the enemy will use to steal the promises and inheritance of God from His people. Being involved in many deliverance and ministry situations over the last 30 years has given this book a richness and depth of Biblical reference we can use to acquire and maintain our freedom.

In conclusion, in all that being said, I have to first give all the glory, honor and praise to our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. He is the anointed one that teaches us to follow our call that the Father created us to do. He allows the Holy Spirit to empower us to do it. He is the one who made the sacrifice so we can share in His richness and faithfulness to complete the call on our life which comes from the Father. This means that through Him we can boldly pursue the Great Commission: To tell people the good news about Jesus and about his love, heal the sick, and cast out demons and raise the dead.

As I begin to acknowledge individuals who helped me through the process and along this journey, I remember a clear and distinct Rhema word I heard from the Lord in 2004. He told me that I would write a full deliverance book to educate the body of Christ and empower them to understand and pursue deliverance. In this received word He told me that a lady I had met in Oriental, North Carolina, would help with this project: Susan Henri Johnson McClees. When I told Henri what the Lord had told me, I asked if she was willing to help. She immediately said, “Sure!” My dear friend and sister in the Lord was a very educated woman who loved writing. She was an English major, a criminal lawyer and eventually helped her husband run an intense lobbying and consulting business which had a great impact on the government and people of North Carolina. Henri and her husband, Joseph Daniel McClees, became dear friends and ministry partners. They

both understood and appreciated what the Lord had called me to do and who he had called me to be. For many years, I would travel to their home in Oriental, North Carolina and take a full week sharing in their life and working on this book. It took many weeks and years to accomplish this project. I would preach about legal rights of the enemy and relevant scriptures while Henri would type and put it on paper. This started and completed the project. I have since lost both Joe and Henri McClees, but their legacy will continue because of their sharing in this work. They both are greatly missed, loved, and remembered. Thank you, Heavenly Father, for Joe and Henri McClees for their involvement and investment in this project!

There are many others who deserve recognition, but I can only mention a few. I believe that all who participated in this project either great or small will receive a great reward here on earth and beyond, in Heaven!

I would like to personally thank my dear friend, pastor and encourager, Mark Virkler. He was kind enough to write a Foreword for this book. He has also trusted me to minister freedom to many of his clients. Mark has helped with documents for my website and counseled me in the art of book writing. He also helped in editing and sharing his experiences in writing. Mark's gifting is teaching others how to hear the voice of God. His contact info is [cwgministries.org](http://cwgministries.org). CWG stands for Communion with God.

Another blessing that occurred through Mark, was introducing me to a dear friend named Kirsten. She is the lady who received ministry and recorded the sessions of her deliverance. This ended up at the end of a document Mark Virkler and I created together called "Prayer Ministry of Identifying and Releasing 'Alters' to Jesus." This document is on my website and includes the recordings of Kirsten's ministry at the end. I am thankful to report that thousands of people needing ministry have listened to her recorded sessions on my website. I'm thankful for her humility and desire to share how we can become free, even if we have SRA attachments (Satanic Ritual Abuse).

I would also like to thank and acknowledge my sister, Lou, who helped with organization, editing and typing. She took over when my friend, Henri, became too sick to help. Also, my brother, Herb, and his wife, Janie, have helped with prayer and intercession for protection and provision during the years of writing this book. They even helped by watching my sweet old hound dog while I travelled. I would also like to mention my sister, Lorrie, who has been involved in administration giftings since the beginning of this ministry. Also, Gary and Susan Meares from North Carolina for financial help and encouragement. I also appreciate my friends Dan and Nancy Nelson for long term support and friendship.

There are so many people who helped through the years, but I can't mention them all. The list goes on and on. I would personally like to thank and bless everyone who has been involved in this project. I pray favor and blessings over you from the Most High God! Thank you all so much. "Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done, on earth, as it is in heaven."



Susan Henri Johnson McClees



# Foreword

## by Dr. Mark Virkler

Founder and president of Communion With God Ministries [cwgministries.org/4keys](http://cwgministries.org/4keys)

Founder and president of Christian Leadership University  
[www.cluonline.com](http://www.cluonline.com)

This book is a story of one pastor's passion and struggle to make healing, miracles, and deliverance work so that his congregation could be set free and enjoy the promises made by God through Christ to believers.

When Bob prayed for healing in his congregation, it was to no avail. God spoke to him and revealed the missing key to making healing prayer effective. This book is the outworking of the *Rhema* Word God spoke to Bob Lucy. Now Bob sees miracles of healing occur regularly in those he ministers to.

This book clearly lays out the path required to experience freedom, healing, and deliverance. Jesus came to **heal the brokenhearted** and **set the captives free** (Isa. 61:1). Healing the splinters in one's heart comes first.

**Bob's definition of an "alter" is *an alternative personality (i.e. part) which has been created to assist in dealing with some trauma. This "alter" becomes a splinter part within one's heart or soul.***

The **correct response** to the traumas we experience is to turn to Jesus and ask Him to walk with us through the experience, ministering His grace to us. The wrong response is to try to cope with life's pressures **ourselves** rather than turning to Jesus. We come up with OUR strategy, supported by OUR strength, rather than receiving HIS strategy and HIS strength. This is idolatry and leads to the formation of alters and a broken heart.

Repenting for seeking to handle traumas in our **own** strength removes our sin so we can ask Jesus to remove the "alter." Then we cast out the demons who were connected to these alters and empowering them. This removes their ungodly voices in our minds and demonic power in our bodies, freeing us to be restored body, soul, and spirit. You will read many such wonderful testimonies in this book.

I was first introduced to Bob when Kirsten came to me needing intense healing from a very broken childhood. Twenty-one years of prayer ministry had not set Kirsten free. I had recommended a DID (Dissociative Identity Disorder) Christian counselor to Kirsten a year earlier when she first approached me. Now, a year later, I found she was in worse shape than ever, and even the seven prayers that I teach in my book, *Prayers that Heal the Heart*, were not helping her.

I looked around and discovered Bob through a good friend of mine in Indiana. She was involved with many ministries within her circle – one of which was graciously hosting Bob in her home and church in order to conduct healing and deliverance meetings. Bob was convinced he could help Kirsten and invited me to be on the call when he ministered to her for the first couple of his two-hour sessions. They were great learning experiences for me, and Kirsten found great freedom during these four hours of ministry. I write about her testimony in this blog ([cwgministries.org/DID](http://cwgministries.org/DID)). Kirsten has allowed us to post links to her recorded ministry times with Bob at the conclusion of the blog.

I am always a learner. I just want things to work the way they are supposed to. Bob taught me, and through this book he can teach you, a prayer approach that he has used successfully with hundreds of people by phone, zoom, and in person. It includes encountering God, hearing God's voice as spontaneous flowing thoughts, and seeing God's visions, as spontaneous flowing pictures which light upon your mind.

So expect a living encounter with the Living God, for that is what is in store for you as you work through this prayer process.

This entire process is guided by Bob Lucy's tremendous insights gained from many years of exploring what the Bible says about satan's snares, and Bob's honing in of an effective path to quickly remove these false, darkened structures from within our hearts and minds.

Bob's website ([boblucyministries.org/](http://boblucyministries.org/)) has a quick summary overview of the steps he takes as he ministers, and I quote:

***The ministry involves the following steps:***

1. *We identify, thank, and dismiss alters;*
2. *We ask Jesus to remove alters;*
3. *We command the demons that were connected to alters to leave in Jesus' name;*  
*and*
4. *We ask the Holy Spirit to fill these vacant places.*

End of quote from Bob's website.

The training on "alter personalities" in this book is the clearest and simplest I have seen, and the ability to remove them quickly is thrilling to me. The fact that Kirsten was able to spend just a few sessions on the phone with Bob and receive more than she had in the 21 years of previous counseling is very telling.

Bob states: *Some Christians have spent many years in secular therapy efforts to reintegrate alters. We do not reintegrate alters, but we give or lead the alters to the Lord. Thus, our ministry is different from secular therapy. We ask the Lord to heal and deliver the person from demonic strongholds established because of alters having been formed.*

Since we all have experienced traumas in our lives, I expect we all have alters to one level or another. I believe anyone praying through the steps laid out in this book will find greater freedom, release, and healing in their lives, and with the training Bob is willing to provide, you can become an excellent minister of this freedom to others.

Thank you, Bob Lucy, for your years of study, revelation, and practice in putting together this thoroughly practical manual offering a unique prayer approach that will help many.



## Chapter One: The Ways of the Lord and the Requirements of our God

### Introduction

The purpose of this book is to open the Scriptures to Christians who want to know the Lord more intimately. This message is designed to equip us to develop deeper relationships with Him. We must learn God's ways to understand how God desires us to behave and how He responds to our conduct.

God reveals His perspective through Scripture. We are called to ponder and desire the deeper things of God. We do this by studying His Word.

**Psalm 107:43 "Whoever is wise, let him heed these things and consider the great love of the Lord."**

Many people are spiritual orphans. They have been raised in a "fatherless" culture, where the role of the father has become distorted. The father does not teach his children. He may not function as the head of the household.

Many young people do not live with their biological fathers. Some have never met their fathers.

Even when the father is present in the home, he may not understand the role of the father as described in the Bible.

God has given the father a specific, righteous role to teach his children the ways of the Lord. **See Deut. 6:1-9, esp. verses 2 and 7:**

**Deut. 6:2 "so that you, your children and their children after them may fear the LORD your God as long as you live by keeping all his decrees and commands that I give you, and so that you may enjoy long life."**

**Deut. 6:7 "Impress them on your children. Talk about them when you sit at home and when you walk along the road, when you lie down and when you get up."**

Many function as "fatherless" people because they do not know what it is to have lived with earthly fathers who disciplined and taught them right from wrong.

Fathers bless their children by teaching them natural skills to equip the children for life. They model wholesome and healthy relationships between husband, wife, and family, faithful and consistent job performance, financial provision for the family, church attendance, and quality time with the children, including planned family mealtimes. These lessons are taught by example. Godly men teach their children the ways of the Lord so that it will go well with them and equip them for life.

It is possible to learn the ways of the heavenly Father, even if you have not learned from your earthly father. This book is designed to help you learn the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God.

## Testimony

Serving as a minister in the early 1990s, I became frustrated, exhausted, and “burned out.” For several years, I prayed for people in the church without results. I saw no one healed during that period. It became increasingly difficult for me to pray for healing.

I had faith and hope in the Word. I heard wonderful testimonies of healing from other ministries. As I prayed, I felt the presence of the Lord and the anointing of healing. My hope would rise, and then no healing occurred. I had never seen anyone healed through the laying on of hands and anointing with oil in the Name of the Lord as the scripture says in **James 5:14-16**.

It appeared to me the Word was not active and alive in the area of healing and deliverance. People at our church approached the altar week after week with the same infirmities, problems, and complaints. I agreed with them in prayer for healing, but nothing seemed to happen. We could not break through for healing, deliverance, or renewal. I anointed them with oil and believed for healing. The presence of God was strong. But we seemed unable to tap into God’s healing power. I had faith for their healing and deliverance, but they remained sick and troubled.

As an interim pastor and worship leader at a church in Richmond, VA, I was preparing a sermon on **James 4:7**, “**Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.**” I knew the enemy continued to hold the people in bondage. He was not fleeing from me or the people who would hear my message. I contended with the Lord about this Scripture. God spoke a Rhema word directly to my mind. He said, “**You can resist the devil all you want so that he will flee, but if he has a right to be there, he will not leave.**” With this Rhema word, the Lord transformed me. It was a radical life-changing moment. I had sought the Lord, and I found Him. He opened my eyes to this truth and to His call on my life.

I began to study the Word as I had never studied it before. This Rhema Word caused me to study with purpose and direction. Early in this process, the Lord expanded my understanding of **Galatians 3:29**.

**Galatians 3:29** “**If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.**”

This Scripture means that if you accept Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior, you become an heir to the promises that God gave to Abraham.

This was an entry point for my understanding of God's Rhema word to me. He taught me that if a Christian is not enjoying the promises God made to Abraham, then something is spiritually out of order.

From Genesis to Revelation, I sought the ways of the Lord, His requirements, and the areas in which the enemy can acquire legal rights to steal our promises, fullness and abundance.

**Psalm 25:10 "All the ways of the Lord are loving and faithful for those who keep the demands of His covenant."**

## **The Ways of the Lord**

As a child of God, I want and need God's promised blessings.

**2 Corinthians 1:20 "For no matter how many promises God has made, they are "Yes" in Christ. And so through Him the "Amen" is spoken by us to the glory of God."**

As an adult, I want to know how God thinks, just as I needed to know how my earthly father thought so I could obey him and stay out of trouble. As a child, I gradually learned to obey because of the discipline of my earthly father. As I matured and obeyed, my home life was peaceful, and my life went well.

Now, when things go awry in my life, I know to quickly go before the Lord. I keep "short accounts" with the Lord. I do not want to accumulate a long list of unrepented sins.

If I am not experiencing the favor, peace, provision, strength, and abundance of the Lord, I know it is not God's fault. Often, I know where I have sinned. If I do not know, I ask Him to show me where I have gone wrong. As He reveals my sin, I repent and return to the path of obedience.

**Proverbs 3:5-6 "Trust in the Lord with all your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight."**

**Matthew 3:8 "Produce fruit in keeping with repentance."**

- **Earthly Father's Responsibilities to His Child**

My earthly father was a strict disciplinarian. I was a strong-willed child, who often refused to do what I was told and disrupted family life in various ways. My father took the time to discipline me, including corporal punishment with his belt. I learned if I disobeyed him, bad things would happen to me. Eventually, I learned what it took to keep from being disciplined by my father.

**Proverbs 13:24 "He who spares the rod hates his son, but he who loves him is careful to discipline him."**

**Proverbs 19:18 “Discipline your son, for in that there is hope; do not be a willing party to his death.”**

My earthly father’s instructions and discipline and the lessons I learned have carried into my relationship with my heavenly Father. I have found that those who teach right from wrong are the ones that love the most.

- **Heavenly Father’s Desire to Teach His Children**

Our heavenly Father has provided us with the truth of His ways and requirements in the Bible. He has taught His earthly children from the earliest generations of man.

As we study the Scriptures, we learn how God disciplines His children.

**Hebrews 12:5-11 “And you have forgotten that word of encouragement that addresses you as sons: ‘My son, do not make light of the Lord’s discipline, and do not lose heart when He rebukes you, because the Lord disciplines those He loves, and He punishes everyone He accepts as a son.’ Endure hardship as discipline; God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father? If you are not disciplined (and everyone undergoes discipline), then you are illegitimate children, and not true sons. Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us, and we respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live! Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in His holiness. No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.”**

The history of man is filled with stories of misery and pain caused by people who refused God’s ways and rebelled against Him.

**Jeremiah 5:3-5 “O Lord, do not your eyes look for truth? You struck them, but they felt no pain; you crushed them, but they refused correction. They made their faces harder than stone and refused to repent. I thought, ‘These are only the poor; they are foolish, for they do not know the way of the Lord, the requirements of their God. So, I will go to the leaders and speak to them; surely, they know the way of the Lord, the requirements of their God.’ But with one accord they too had broken off the yoke and torn off the bonds.”**

God requires us to personally seek and learn all we can about Him. Too often, we fail to read, study, and meditate on the ways of the Lord as revealed in all Scripture. We benefit when we learn to know God and His expectations.

**Isaiah 55:6-7 “Seek the Lord while He may be found; call on Him while He is near. Let the wicked forsake his way and the evil man his thoughts. Let him turn to the Lord, and He will have mercy on Him, and to our God, for He will freely pardon.”**

Many Christians refuse to study the ways of the Lord and choose to remain ignorant of His requirements. He demands that we acknowledge Him as Lord of all. Any other thought process is rebellion to Him.

**I Samuel 15:23** “For rebellion is like the sin of divination, and arrogance like the evil of idolatry.”

**I Corinthians 10:11** “These things happened to them as examples and were written down as warnings for us, on whom the fulfillment of the ages has come.”

**II Timothy 3:16-17** “All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.”

## Ways of the Lord

These are Biblical examples of the ways of the Lord. How He thinks and reacts to our thought processes and actions.

- 1) Idolatry: anytime we use a source for comfort, provision, or healing other than Him. His perception of this is that we hate Him. He is available to provide all necessary provisions for us, yet we turn to other sources. **Exodus 20:5** (the ten commandments)
- 2) Gossip, judgement, and accusation: When we don't bless people, but gossip and judge them, God's perception is that we are talking to Him. He says this, “Who are you to talk to me about the work of my own hands. It was I Who created the earth and put mankind upon it. I marshalled the starry host.” **Isaiah 45:11-12**
- 3) Complaining: When we complain to one another, God's perception is that we are complaining to Him. He told the children of Israel, He heard them complaining and grumbling in their tents for forty years. **Deuteronomy 1:27 and Psalm 106:25**
- 4) Trust in mankind: When we put our trust in man and receive our strength from mankind, God perceives that our heart has turned from Him. **Jeremiah 17:5-8**
- 5) Walk in repentance: When we don't repent of our sin, God's perception is that we are saying to Him that we have no sin. **Jeremiah 2:35, 8:5-6**
- 6) Tithe on your income: When we don't tithe to ministries and charities from our income, He perceives that we are robbing Him. **Malachi 3:7-9**

- 7) Rebellion to God's ways: When we disregard God's ways and follow our path into rebellion, He perceives that our rebellion is towards Him. It's the same thing as being involved in witchcraft. **I Samuel 15:23**
- 8) Sexual intimacy: When we are sexually intimate with someone, God's perception is that we are creating a covenant of marriage before Him. This means to God, that we are making a statement to Him saying that this is who our partner will be for life. Any other sexual experiences after that first encounter is considered adultery. This is God's laws and ways, not man's. **Proverbs 2:17 and Malachi 2:14**
- 9) Pursuit of perversion: When we pursue the idolatry of perversion, and use it as a source of pleasure, identity, or comfort, God's perception is that we are saying to Him, "I will not serve you." As we get deeper into this idolatry, God's perception is that we are also saying to Him, "I love foreign gods, and I must go after them." **Jeremiah 2:20-25**
- 10) Do not judge: When we judge one another, God's perception is that we think we are righteous judges like He is. In other words, we think that we are like Him, and we are not. God perceives this as mockery towards Him. We do not know the heart, thoughts, and intentions of mankind. There are many Scriptures that reference this (see Chapter of Bitter Root Judgement and Expectancy). **Galatians 6:7**

### Moses, David, and Paul

These three mighty men of the Bible were interested in knowing God more intimately, His Ways and His Requirements.

They all cried out to the Heavenly Father desperately wanting to know Him more. **"Show me Your Ways so that I can know you more."**

As we seek His ways and ponder how God thinks, we have a deeper understanding of His requirements.

Moses, David, and Paul chose to seek and know God's ways. They hungered for relationship and favor from Him. They were not content with only knowing His deeds. They wanted to know Him.

God yearns for relationship with us, His children. Moses, David, and Paul pleased the Lord as they developed intimate relationships with Him.

As Christians, we can know God personally and intimately. The Lord wants us to draw near to Him. God offers each of us the opportunity to enjoy intimate times with

Him, just as did Moses, David, and Paul. People have a tendency to believe that these three men were above all others, that they were anointed, called, and empowered to complete their work. They all three were, but we need to realize that they were all restored murderers. These three men made a clear choice to learn and seek ways of the Lord, and the requirements of our God. We have the same ability as these three men.

Jesus commanded us to seek first His Kingdom.

**Matthew 6:33 “But seek first His Kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.”**

- **Moses Asked God to Teach Him**

The Lord showed Moses His ways because Moses asked.

**Exodus 33:13 “If You are pleased with me, teach me Your ways so I may know You and continue to find favor with You. Remember that this nation is Your people.”**

Jesus assured His disciples that they could seek and find answers and favor from God the Father.

**Matthew 7:7-11 “Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened. ‘Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!’”**

Because Moses asked to know the ways of the Lord, God met with Moses face to face. God taught Moses and transformed him. Moses became a remarkable leader and advocate for the people of Israel, displaying courage, wisdom, and patience.

**Exodus 33:11a “The Lord would speak to Moses face to face, as one speaks to a friend.”**

Moses spent many hours in the direct presence of the Lord. As he returned to the people of Israel, his face would radiate the Glory of God. Moses’ intimate relationship with God enabled him to endure forty years in the desert. He successfully led the people of Israel out of Egypt to the border of the Promised Land.

In the meanwhile, the people of Israel saw God’s deeds, but they did not press in as Moses did to know God’s ways. Moses taught by example how to be in the presence of God. He planned to teach them how to hear from God for themselves. As the presence of God surrounded Moses and the people of Israel, all but Moses became afraid and left.

**Psalm 103:7 “He made known his ways to Moses, His deeds to the people of Israel”.**

The next leader of Israel, Joshua, observed Moses and learned to abide in the presence of the Lord. After the death of Moses, Joshua led the people into the Promised Land.

- **David Asked God to Teach Him.**

David found favor with God and direction for his life by asking Him to teach and guide him. As he cried out to the Lord to show him His ways, the Lord responded. He taught David deeper and more profound understanding of the nature of God.

**Psalm 25:4-5 “Show me your ways, O Lord, teach me your paths; guide me in your truth and teach me, for you are God my Savior, and my hope is in you all day long.”**

**Psalm 27:11a “Teach me your way, O Lord.”**

**Psalm 119** in its entirety expresses David’s desire to seek and know God’s Ways.

**Psalm 119:33-36 “Teach me, O Lord, to follow your decrees; then I will keep them to the end. Give me understanding, and I will keep your law and obey it with all my heart. Direct me in the path of your commands, for there I find delight. Turn my heart towards your statutes and not toward selfish gain.”**

God blessed David for his love of God as well as David’s hunger to know God. Through countless hours of working as a shepherd in the fields, David learned to draw close to God through worship. He poured out his heart to the Lord.

Many of the Psalms were written by David. They contain David’s petitions to God and his responses to his life experiences, as well as his passionate worship of God.

The Lord trained and prepared David the shepherd boy to be a giant killer, a mighty warrior king, and the greatest psalmist in all of Israel’s history.

God measured all other Old Testament kings of Israel according to the standard of David’s conduct and relationship with God.

God honored David through the Messianic prophecies in Isaiah and Jeremiah, promising that the Messiah would come through David’s family line. When Jesus arrived, He was repeatedly referred to as the Son of David.

- **Paul Asked God to Teach Him.**

In his letter to the church in Philippi, Paul reveals his heart’s desire to know Christ. After years of preaching the Gospel and suffering persecution for his belief in Jesus Christ, Paul reveals he continues to want to know Christ more. He yearns to know Jesus so fully that he becomes like him even unto death.

**Philippians 3:8-10** “What is more, I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them rubbish, that I may gain Christ and be found in Him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ — the righteousness that comes from God and is by faith. I want to know Christ and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of sharing in his sufferings, becoming like him in his death, and so, somehow, to attain to the resurrection from the dead.”

Paul, formerly Saul, thought he knew God through following the Law as interpreted by the Pharisees. Saul was a well-educated, Greek-speaking Jew from the important city of Tarsus. He was a Roman citizen when Rome was the superpower of the world.

Our first introduction to Saul is in Acts 7. The Pharisees who stoned Stephen laid their garments at the feet of Saul, a young and committed Pharisee.

As many Jews became followers of Jesus, Saul breathed out threats and murder against them.

He asked for and received written letters to the synagogues of Damascus, so that he could arrest Christians.

Saul encountered Jesus on the road to Damascus. The Lord appeared as a heavenly light. The power of the Lord threw Saul to the ground. Jesus said, “Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?” Saul was trembling and astonished, and when he opened his eyes, he was blind. (See **Acts 9**).

Saul was instantly and completely converted. After one of Jesus’ followers prayed for him, Saul’s sight was restored. He was baptized and immediately started preaching the Gospel of Jesus. He spent time getting to know Jesus through prayer and studying the Word.

Saul had acquired an in-depth knowledge of the Old Testament through his early education. After his conversion, he learned the ways of the Lord demonstrated by Jesus.

With his religious education as the son of a Pharisee family, Saul connected Jesus to all the prophetic promises and the ways of the Lord revealed in the Old Testament.

With clarity and revelation, Saul preached and taught the meaning of Jesus’s life, death, and resurrection.

Saul, later called Paul, served Jesus for the remainder of his life on earth, enduring numerous hardships, beatings, imprisonments, and other persecutions.

**II Corinthians 11:23b-28** “I have worked much harder, been in prison more frequently, been flogged more severely, and been exposed to death again and again. Five times I received from the Jews the forty lashes minus one. Three times I was beaten with rods, once I was stoned, three times I was shipwrecked, I spent a night and a day in the

open sea, I have been constantly on the move. I have been in danger from rivers, in danger from bandits, in danger from my own countrymen, in danger from Gentiles; in danger in the city, in danger in the country, in danger at sea; and in danger from false brothers. I have labored and toiled and have often gone without sleep; I have known hunger and thirst and have often gone without food; I have been cold and naked.”

He traveled and preached the Gospel, with at least three lengthy missionary journeys through Greece, Turkey, Syria, and other regions.

Paul wrote 13 of the 26 books in the New Testament. He was imprisoned several times, and continued to write letters, called epistles, while he was imprisoned. Paul was ultimately martyred for his faith in Jesus.

Paul accomplished much for the Lord, despite his sufferings, because of his relentless pursuit to know Jesus.

**Philippians 3:10-11** “I want to know Christ and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of sharing in his sufferings, becoming like him in his death, and so, somehow, to attain to the resurrection from the dead.”

- **What do we learn from Moses, David, and Paul?**

We are called to seek the Lord’s ways and requirements as did Moses, David, and Paul. They asked the Lord to show them His ways, so they could know Him more. These men desired above all else to know God more intimately, and each saw Him move in great power and might.

Although all three of these men were murderers, God enabled each of them to complete the work they were called to do. Through seeking Him and His ways, they achieved great things for the people of Israel and the world. Each fulfilled the call upon his life by obeying God’s commands and drawing close to God.

We are to crave God’s favor, promises, and most of all, His presence.

## **The Elect in the Last Days**

Followers of Jesus Christ are to be the “elect,” people who know His ways and are not deceived. Jesus instructed his disciples about the end of the age.

**Matthew 24:4-5** “Jesus answered, ‘Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name, claiming, ‘I am the Christ,’ and will deceive many.’”

**Matthew 24:22-24** “If those days had not been cut short, no one would survive, but for the sake of the elect those days will be shortened. At that time if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here is the Christ!’ or, ‘There he is!’ do not believe it. For false christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect – if that were possible.”

The elect knows Jesus Christ as the Word of God. The elect are people who have sought the ways of the Lord, learned these ways, and continue in obedience, even in times of trouble. In this place of safety, they will not be deceived.

**John 1:1 “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”**

God’s Word does not change. Jesus was the Word in the beginning and will be the Word at the end. If our thought processes do not align with the Word of God, they do not align with Jesus Christ and are anti-christ thoughts.

**John 1:14 “The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the one and only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.”**

This scripture plainly states that Jesus Christ is the Word of God. If a person rejects the Word of God for his or her own “revelation”, the person is not a member of “the elect.” They are already deceived.

We must know Him so well the devil cannot deceive us with lies and counterfeits. We do not begin our lives with such knowledge or the ability to discern the truth. We must learn what God requires so it will go well with us and our children. We learn through studying the Bible and seeking Him.

**2 Timothy 2:15(AMP) “Study and do your best to present yourself to God approved, a workman (tested by trial) who has no reason to be ashamed, accurately handling and skillfully teaching the word of truth.”**

Before Jesus’ ministry started, He was sent into the desert to fast for forty days. He was tempted by satan three separate times. Jesus used the Scriptures to fight the devil. (See **Matthew 4:1-11**). Jesus used the Word of God to defeat every temptation.

Jesus provided this and other examples of using the Word of God to defeat the enemy and commanded us to do the same.

**II Corinthians 10:3-5 “For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”**

One of our most powerful weapons is the Word of God. We know the Word is the truth. Anything that contradicts the Word is a lie.

## **New Covenant Relationship to the Old Covenant**

We are called to study all of the Bible, Old Testament and New Testament. There is no part of the Bible that should be excluded from our reflections. The fullness of the

ways of the Lord is contained in the Old Covenant and the New Covenant. We should accept all of what He offers.

**Deut. 7:9-15** “Know therefore that the Lord your God is God; he is the faithful God, keeping his covenant of love to a thousand generations of those who love him and keep his commands. But those who hate Him He will repay to their face by destruction; He will not be slow to repay to their face those who hate him. Therefore, take care to follow the commands, decrees and laws I give you today. If you pay attention to these laws and are careful to follow them, then the Lord your God will keep his covenant of love with you, as he swore to your forefathers. He will love you and bless you and increase your numbers. He will bless the fruit of your womb, the crops of your land — your grain, new wine and oil — the calves of your herds and the lambs of your flocks in the land that He swore to your forefathers to give you. You will be blessed more than any other people; none of your men or women will be childless, nor any of your livestock without young. The Lord will keep you free from every disease. He will not inflict on you the horrible diseases you knew in Egypt, but He will inflict them on all who hate you.”

### The Heart of the Father

**Deut. 5:29** “Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear me and keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!”

**Psalm 103:11-13** “For as high as the heavens are above the earth, so great is his love for those who fear him; as far as the east is from the west, so far has he removed our transgressions from us. As a father has compassion on his children, so the Lord has compassion on those who fear him.”

We are called to know Him, to hear His voice, hunger for more of Him, and to seek His ways.

If anyone has trouble and needs help in these areas, God has provided directions on how to ask for help.

**James 4:2b** “You do not have because you do not ask God.”

**James 1:5-8** “If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not expect to receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.”

### The Heart of the Son

**Matthew 5:17-19** “Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by

any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished. Anyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of heaven.”

John 12:49 “For I did not speak of my own accord, but the Father who sent me commanded me what to say and how to say it.”  
(See also John 14:31.)

Jesus said the Scripture cannot be set aside or cancelled or broken or annulled.  
(See John 10:35 AMP)

### **Beware of the Marcion Heresy**

A heresy has reemerged in the church arising from a false teaching. In 144 AD, a man called Marcion claimed to be a Christian, but rejected the God of the Old Testament.

Marcion rejected the Hebrew Bible (i.e., the Old Testament). He accepted Paul’s teachings but wrote another version of the Gospel of Luke that differs from the canonical Book of Luke. He was eventually excommunicated from the Church and moved from Rome to Turkey.

This heresy continues to affect some in the Body of Christ. Marcionism faded from history. However, there have been subsequent related heresies that reject God the Father and deny many truths in the Bible.

The church suffers from ongoing contamination from the rejection of various Biblical teachings.

Occasionally, you will hear someone declare, “I am a New Testament Christian.” Unfortunately, this person may have been taught to ignore or devalue the Old Testament, which contains the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God.

If we denounce the Old Testament, we denounce the promises of God. There are many wonderful promises in the Old Testament, which we do not want to forfeit.

Isaiah 46:3-4 “Listen to me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the people of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and gray hairs I am He, I am He who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you.”

### **Warning to Us: Blessings and Curses**

Deuteronomy 28 contains detailed descriptions of the blessings of obedience to God’s ways and requirements (Deut. 28:1-14) and the curses caused by disobedience (Deut. 28:15-68).

**Deuteronomy 8** declares we must not forget the Lord. We are reminded of His blessings, including prosperity. We are admonished not to forget to obey His commands, or else we will become proud and be destroyed. For example, the Lord reminds us it is He who gives us the ability to produce wealth.

**Deut. 8:18** “But remember the Lord your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today.”

As we study this Scripture, we realize our income and provision come from God. Our obligation is to acknowledge Him as provider, and to be thankful to Him for providing it. Give thanks and acknowledge Him as the One Who sustains us.

### **Blessings of Tithing**

**Deut.14:22** “Be sure to set aside a tenth of all that your fields produce each year.”

A powerful blessing God gives us to provide financial security in the midst of the world’s economic troubles is tithing.

The enemy would steal our blessings by persuading us not to tithe. For example, the deceiver will whisper to our minds that we cannot afford to tithe. He will suggest that others will take care of the financial needs and you don’t need to.

**Malachi 3:7-10** “Ever since the time of your forefathers you have turned away from my decrees and have not kept them. Return to me, and I will return to you,” says the Lord Almighty. “But you ask, ‘How are we to return?’ Will a man rob God? Yet you rob me. But you ask, ‘How do we rob you?’ “In tithes and offerings. You are under a curse — the whole nation of you — because you are robbing me. Bring the whole tithe into the storehouse, that there may be food in my house. Test me in this,” says the Lord Almighty, “and see if I will not throw open the floodgates of heaven and pour out so much blessing that you will not have room enough for it.”

**Malachi 3:11-12 (KJV)** “And I will rebuke the devourer for your sake, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field,” saith the Lord of hosts. “And all nations shall call you blessed: for you shall be a delightful land,” says the Lord of hosts.

Now, as in the days of Malachi, some people refuse to tithe. Some claim tithing is “under the Old Covenant” and therefore does not apply to them. When these people reject God’s command to tithe, they reject God’s promised blessings to the tither.

People lose the blessings of tithing because they denounce, ignore, or remain ignorant of the ways of the Lord and requirements of our God. They suffer under the

curse God describes in **Malachi 3:9** because they rob God of the tithe that belongs to Him.

In **Malachi 3:10**, God says to test Him with the tithe and see whether God won't bless you with overflowing blessings. It is the only Scripture in which God says to test Him.

Tithing gives us the opportunity to prove we will trust God in all aspects as our Provider. God does not need our money. God already owns all of creation.

**Psalm 50:12b** "For the world is Mine, and all that is in it."

**Leviticus 27:30** "A tithe of everything from the land, whether grain from the soil or fruit from the trees, belongs to the Lord; it is holy to the Lord."

**Leviticus 27:30** reveals the way the Lord considers the tithe: it belongs to Him. If you do not return it to Him, you are keeping something that does not belong to you. You are robbing the rightful owner of His property.

The tithe, the tenth of the increase, is holy, set aside for the Lord. This is His way.

- **Trust the Ways of the Lord**

**Deuteronomy 10:12-13** "The Lord your God is testing you to find out whether you love him with all your heart and with all your soul. It is the Lord your God you must follow, and Him you must revere. Keep His commands and obey Him; serve Him and hold fast to Him."

**Psalm 139:1-4** "O Lord, You have searched me and you know me. You know when I sit and when I rise; you perceive my thoughts from afar. You discern my going out and my lying down; you are familiar with all my ways. Before a word is on my tongue, you know it completely, O Lord."

- **Legal Rights of the Enemy**

The blessings of Abraham, such as peace, prosperity, health, and long life, favor, a good marriage, children, and other blessings can be ours. But we can lose these blessings if we allow them to be stolen. They can be lost to the enemy through apathy, lack of knowledge, rebellion, unforgiveness, judgment, or disobedience.

The enemy steals God's promises when he has the right to do so. We can relinquish areas to the devil whether or not we recognize what we are doing. The enemy is always looking for weakness in our faith to find a legal right to torment and steal from us. Remember that he roams around like a hungry lion seeking whom he can devour.

**I Pet 5:8** "Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour."

God's Word described several situations in which the devil has the right to rob us:

1. Person suffers from generational curses and sins of the bloodline. (See **Exodus 20:4-6; Psalm 51:5**);
2. Person suffers from a lack of knowledge (**Hosea 4:6**);
3. Person knows the ways of the Lord but chooses to reject the knowledge of God (**Hosea 4:6**);
4. Person ignores or forgets the ways of the Lord and the requirements of his God (**Hosea 4:6**).

**Hosea 4:6** "My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. 'Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.'"

- **Blood Covenant of Salvation**

Many sound teachings are available on the covenantal nature of God and His specific covenants with us. This broad area of study is beyond the scope of this book. However, it is essential to understand God's way of the blood covenant of salvation.

From Genesis through the Gospels, the Bible records that blood is shed for the atonement of sin, to remove the effects of sin upon the sinner.

As recorded in **Genesis 3:21**, after Adam and Eve sinned, "**The Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them.**" The garments of skin were from animals killed to cover the nakedness of the first sinners.

**Leviticus 17:11** "For the life of a creature is in the blood, and I have given it to you to make atonement for yourselves on the altar; it is the blood that makes atonement for one's life."

In fact, the law requires that nearly everything be cleansed with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness of Sin. (See **Hebrews 9:22**)

**Matthew 26:28** "This is my blood of the covenant, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins."

In order to be forgiven of our sins, we must respond to Father God in love and repentance and faith in Jesus the Christ, who shed His blood for us on the cross. Jesus Christ is the final sacrifice for all sin. No more animal blood sacrifices are needed or effective.

For all of us who wish to become heirs to the promises of Abraham and for those who are preparing to receive deliverance, we must accept Jesus Christ as our Lord and Savior.

Pray the prayer below to accept and affirm Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior.

## **Prayers**

### **1. My Blood Covenant Salvation Prayer**

Heavenly Father, I come to You in the Name of Jesus Christ. I believe You love me and sent Your Son to remove the sin which separates me from You. Father, I repent of all sin in my life. Please forgive me and cleanse me by the blood of Jesus Christ.

By faith, I receive Your forgiveness and cleansing in Jesus' name. Your Word says I am brought near to You by the blood of Jesus Christ, through which I enter into blood covenant salvation relationship with You now. Lord Jesus, I invite You to come into my life, and I submit totally to You and to Your Word (John 14:23). I confess with my mouth that Jesus is Lord. I believe in my heart God raised Him from the dead. It is with my heart I believe and am justified, and it is with my mouth I confess and am saved (Rom.10:9-10). I ask You to be Lord of my spirit, my soul (mind, thoughts, will, intellect, and emotions), and my body (I Thess.5:23). You are faithful to complete the work You have begun in me (Phil 1:6).

By faith, I confess sin shall no longer have dominion over me because your Holy Spirit lives in me. I confess I am saved. I am under covenant through Jesus Christ to receive the promises that are for me including salvation, deliverance, healing, renewal, and all God's promises for His children.

I renounce the authority of satan or any authority other than Jesus Christ over all areas of my life. I renounce every stronghold or influence of the devil, including ungodly soul ties, masonic attachments, ungodly beliefs, bitter root judgments, all personal sin, and everything inherited through the generations. The Word tells me I have a heavenly Father, and I now inherit only from Him.

Lord, empower me to live for You. Release the Holy Spirit within me, that He may convict me of sin. I have access to the power of the Holy Spirit and the right to every spiritual gift (1 Cor. 12:4-11). Help me walk daily in the fullness of the Spirit filled life. I open my heart and ask You to fill me now with Your Holy Spirit. In Jesus' Name, Amen.

## 2. Prayer to Receive the Baptism in the Holy Spirit

Heavenly Father, I come to You in the Name of Jesus, Your Son, Who has saved me. I repent of my sins and ask You to wash me clean by the Blood of Jesus.

Jesus said, “And I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper (Comforter, Advocate, Intercessor—Counselor, Strengthened, Standby), to be with you forever—the Spirit of Truth, whom the world cannot receive [and take to its heart] because it does not see Him or know Him, but you know Him because He (the Holy Spirit) remains with you continually and will be in you.” **John 14:16 (AMP)**

In **Mark 1:8**, John the Baptist promised that while he baptized with water, You would baptize with the Holy Spirit and fire. So, Lord, I ask You to baptize me with Your Holy Spirit and fire. I am thankful as I ask for your empowerment and fire, it will refine me into who you have called and created me to be. I know You indwelt me at my salvation (**John 20:22; Romans 8:9**). Now, I ask You to fill me to overflowing with Your Presence, Your power, and Your joy.

You promised in **Acts 1:5-8** that Your disciples would receive power and ability when the Holy Spirit would come upon us. You promised to give us power to be Your witnesses even to the ends of the earth. This wonderful promise was fulfilled at the Feast of Pentecost in Jerusalem, as described in Acts 2.

I pray the Holy Spirit come upon me now. I yield myself to You. I pray you breathe on me a breath of refreshment and empowerment. I receive by faith the baptism of the Holy Spirit. I welcome you, Holy Spirit, in the Name of Jesus. Thank You for empowering me for Your service. Fill me with boldness and courage to speak Your Word with power. I receive this wonderful empowerment by faith.

As promised in **John 14:26**, send me the Holy Spirit, the Advocate, to teach me all things and remind me of everything You teach in Your Word.

I desire spiritual gifts according to Your Word and ask You to grant me Your spiritual giftings according to Your will for my life. I joyfully accept Your gifts for me, in Jesus' Name.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

### 3. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
 all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
 all heads of python with all python eggs;  
 all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
 all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached  
 infirmities, mental and physical;  
 all heads of rejection;  
 all heads of fear;  
 all heads of perversion;  
 all heads of idolatry;  
 all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
 and, all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.



## Chapter Two: Generational Curses and Sins of the Bloodlines

I have witnessed people healed and delivered from physical, emotional, and mental infirmities caused by generational sins. Many are delivered from addictions arising from sins in their bloodlines. They received deliverance after praying the Prayer to Break Generational Curses and Sins of the Bloodlines.

For example, I witnessed a man repent of the perversion attached to pornography. His father was a blatant user of pornography. This man grew up in a perverted household. When he repented and saw the truth about perversion, he was wonderfully delivered and set free.

People often speak of experiencing true conviction of sin for the first time after repenting of generational sins. When we repent of sin, the enemy can no longer blind us, and hidden sins are fully exposed.

Many people are delivered from mindsets of fear through repentance of generational sins. They grew up watching their families live with ungodly beliefs of fear, worry, and anxiety. After repentance, they choose to trust God more fully and enjoy His favor.

### Introduction

God created us to live in relationship with Him. He designed us to love, honor, and worship Him. Our heavenly Father placed within us the desire to know Him more intimately.

He loves us and wants it to go well with us and our children. God desires our families to be blessed for a thousand generations (**Deut. 5:10; 5:29**). God blesses us with health, joyful family relationships, peace, meaningful work, prosperity, and favor. The path to these blessings is obedience to His ways.

In **Deuteronomy 28**, we learn of the great generational blessings that come with obedience to God.

### Generational Blessings

In learning about generational sin and curses, we must first understand the power of generational blessings. As Christians, we are children of God and are "Abraham's seed," heirs to the promises of Abraham.

**Deuteronomy 5:10 "...but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments."**

This scripture tells us of a covenant of love due to our obedience.

**John 1:12-13 "Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God — children born not of natural descent, nor of human decision or a husband's will, but born of God."**

Galatians 3:29 "If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

As Christians, we can partake in the generational blessings of Abraham's seed.

- **Blessings of Abraham**

**Deut. 8:18 "But remember the Lord your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today."**

To obtain the blessings of Abraham, do as Abraham did. He heard God and believed Him. This was attributed to Abraham as righteousness. The story of Abraham's life demonstrates the blessings God gave him.

God promised He would give Abraham the ability to produce wealth and acquire land. He lived a long and healthy life. God promised Abraham's name would be known.

God promised that who Abraham blessed would be blessed, and those who Abraham cursed would be cursed. God promised to defeat Abraham's enemies. God promised that Abraham's seed would be as numerous as the stars in the sky and the sand of the sea.

Fruit of Abraham's covenant promises was the love of husband and wife. Abraham loved Sarah. She loved and honored her husband.

**Deut. 5:29 "Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear me and keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!"**

As we study the Bible, we read about Moses, David, and Paul, mighty men of God. All hungered for intimacy, and asked God to show them His ways so they could know Him more. They all expressed this same desire for intimacy with God. These men were not perfect. All were murderers, but repented. Each inclined his heart to God, feared Him, and sought to keep God's commands.

## **Refinement is Discipline From the Lord**

What happens when we refuse to obey God's ways?

**Jeremiah 9:7 "Therefore this is what the Lord Almighty says: 'See. I will refine and test them, for what else can I do because of the sin of my people?'"**

God employs the process of "refinement," purifying us as by fire. Some people have never heard of the ways of the Lord and requirements of our God. Other people know and

refuse to obey. All disobedient people will miss the blessings of Abraham and experience the Refiner's fire.

**Proverbs 3:11-12 "My son, do not despise the Lord's discipline, and do not resent his rebuke, because the Lord disciplines those He loves, as a father the son he delights in."**

**Hosea 4:6 "My people are destroyed from a lack of knowledge."**

God's refinement is designed to draw us into obedience and teach us to conform to His plan for our lives. His desire for mankind to know His Ways is so strong that He imposes a penalty for disobedience upon us and our children.

**James 1:2-4 "Consider it pure joy, my brothers, whenever you face trials of many kinds, because you know that the testing of your faith develops perseverance. Perseverance must finish its work so that you may be mature and complete, not lacking anything."**

**Malachi 3:2 "But who can endure the day of his coming? Who can stand when he appears? For he will be like a refiner's fire or a launderer's soap."**

**II Samuel 14:14 "Like water spilled on the ground, which cannot be recovered, so we must die. But God does not take away life; instead, he devises ways so that a banished person may not remain estranged from him."**

**Hebrews 12:5b-11 "My son, do not make light of the Lord's discipline, and do not lose heart when he rebukes you, because the Lord disciplines the one he loves, and he punishes everyone he accepts as a son.' Endure hardship as discipline; God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father? If you are not disciplined (and everyone undergoes discipline), then you are illegitimate children and not true sons. Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us, and we respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live! Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in his holiness. No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it."**

Generational sins have terrible consequences, establishing rights for the enemy to enter in at the time of conception of the child.

The enemy's plan for us and our children includes murder, lies, torment, misery, sickness, and eternal death. Disobedient and unrepentant parents give the enemy a right of entrance to the child in the womb. He wants us all deceived so that we will lose our reward. The elect of God knows that there will always be warfare attached to us overcoming.

**John 8:44b** "He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the Truth, for there is no Truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies."

God wants us to repent and resist sin that would bring curses upon us and the generations after us.

## **Born into Sin**

David prophesied in **Psalm 51:5** "Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me."

There is a download of unredeemed sin at the moment of conception. Unrepented sin comes down bloodlines through the generations from the family lines of the father and the mother.

## **Generational Curses**

There are three generational curses specified, with times of duration, in the Bible.

Satan seeks to reestablish rights to these curses past the periods of time imposed by God. He wants to contaminate human bloodlines for as long as possible, renewing his legal right to torment new generations.

When a particular sin is practiced by parents, the legal right of Satan transfers to the children upon conception.

In turn, the child learns from the parent and repeats ungodly behaviors, thus renewing and extending the curse past the original period ordained by God.

The good news is that these curses are easily broken by the Blood of the Lamb. When one acknowledges a generational sin and repents for it, then the attached curse is broken and removed.

No one should assume a family line is pure and free of sin. We cannot know all of the sinful activities and idolatries of our ancestors.

All Christians should repent of generational sins of the bloodlines and break all generational curses.

### **1. Curse of Idolatry**

The first Biblical generational curse is caused by idolatry. It is set forth in the Ten Commandments (**Exodus 20:2-5** and **Deuteronomy 5:8-9**). This curse works to the third and fourth generations of those who hate God.

When we turn to another source instead of God, He perceives this as hatred toward Him.

In the First and Second Commandments, God says:

**Exodus 20:2-6** "I am the Lord your God, who brought you out of Egypt, out of the land of slavery. You shall have no other gods before me. You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below. You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments."

**Jeremiah 2:9** "Therefore I bring charges against you again,' declares the Lord. And I will bring charges against your children's children."

God presses us to obey Him. He promises He will sustain us.

**Isaiah 46:3-4** "Listen to me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the house of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and gray hairs I am He, I am He who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you."

Idolatry is forsaking God to pursue another source of provision or comfort. He wants us to resist this sin of idolatry.

Idolatry does not only mean that we worship graven images or have a statue of buddha, a bottle tree, a gazing ball, or a dream catcher. Idolatry more broadly means we ignore God's promises to pursue what we think we need.

Many devote themselves to other sources to obtain wealth, power, personal recognition and fame, pleasure, health, comfort, entertainment, or other provision.

God sees these pursuits as hatred toward Him. God judges that we hate Him when we pursue what we think we need rather than pursuing Him.

This is one of the Ways of the Lord. Perhaps we do not initially realize our pursuit of wealth, perversion, or self-indulgence means we "hate God." But He views these pursuits as idolatry and hatred toward Him. We have no right to question the Lord's Ways. He is Lord of all. He is the One Who created the earth and put mankind upon it. He is the One Who marshalled the starry host (**Isa 45:12**).

**Isaiah 55:8-9** "For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways," declares the Lord. 'As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.'"

**Proverbs 3:5-6** "Trust in the Lord with all your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight."

## 2. Curse of Illegitimacy

The second Biblical generational curse is a ten-generational curse working against illegitimate children. This generational curse more often repeats itself. There are spirits

attached from the original sin, and the legal rights to the enemy can easily be redone. This replicating sin causes a fresh ten generation contamination of legal rights to the enemy.

**Deut. 23:2 (Amplified) "A person of illegitimate birth shall not enter the assembly of the Lord; none of his descendants, even to the tenth generation."**

**Psalm 82:1a "God presides in the great assembly."**

In the days of Moses, illegitimate people were forbidden to enter the Tabernacle. Now, people born out of wedlock can enter the church, but they may have great difficulty entering into the presence of the Lord. They experience hindrances in their spiritual development.

Illegitimacy becomes a right of the enemy to blind the person in the spiritual realm and prevent or restrict the person from experiencing the Presence of God. The person may attend church services where others are experiencing the wonderful presence of God, but he or she feels nothing.

Despite cultural relaxation about illegitimacy, God does not change.

(See **Malachi 3; Number 23:19; Isaiah 40:8**).

It is not sufficient for a person born out of wedlock to claim, "It is not my fault." The sin was perpetrated by the parents, but the curse attaches to the child.

To receive forgiveness and break the curse of illegitimacy, acknowledge the sin, and repent of it. Repent honestly and deeply. The curse attached to the sin can be broken the moment the sin is revealed, and the person acknowledges and confesses the sin.

The parents of an illegitimate child can repent and break off the curse on the young child. An adult that was born illegitimate must take authority, repent, and break the curse for himself.

Many mighty men in the Bible knew to repent on behalf of their ancestors as well as themselves. (See **II Chronicles 7:13-15**). The prayer of this scripture causes the Lord's ears and eyes to be attentive to our prayers offered in this place. (See **Daniel 9**).

**1 John 1:9 "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness."**

However, if we learn of this curse and refuse to repent, it is perceived by God as if we say we have no sin.

**Jeremiah 2:35 "you say, 'I am innocent; he is not angry with me.' But I will pass judgment on you because you say, 'I have not sinned.'"**

Our lack of repentance and ignorance in this area is the same thing as saying to God, "I have not sinned." That is the way He thinks, and we cannot question it.

**Jeremiah 8:5-6** “Why have these people turned away? Why does Jerusalem always turn away? They cling to deceit; they refuse to return. I have listened attentively but they do not say what is right. No one repents of his wickedness, saying, ‘What have I done?’ Each pursues his own course like a horse charging into battle.”

### **3. Curse of Witchcraft**

The third Biblical generational curse is witchcraft, a curse to the tenth generation. This curse arises from choosing to practice any form of witchcraft. This generational attachment also reproduces itself. Each generation has a tendency to lean towards the sin of witchcraft. This is because the spirit attached to the previous generations are in the individual. As this attachment reproduces, legal rights are reopened to the enemy for a fresh contamination of the next ten generations.

**Deut. 23:3-6** "No Ammonite or Moabite or any of his descendants may enter the assembly of the Lord, even in the tenth generation. For they did not come to meet you with bread and water on your way when you came out of Egypt, and they hired Balaam son of Beor from Pethor in Aram Naharaim to pronounce a curse on you. However, the Lord your God would not listen to Balaam but turned the curse into a blessing for you, because the Lord your God loves you. Do not seek a treaty of friendship with them as long as you live."

The Ammonites and Moabites were already cursed because of their illegitimacy and incest (**Gen. 19:30-38**). In Deuteronomy 23, the Ammonites and Moabites summoned the psychic Balaam to curse Israel. Balaam spoke out curses, which would have destroyed Israel. Balaam's curses had power.

God heard the curses and intervened. God would not allow Balaam's curses to affect His people, but turned Balaam's curses into blessings for Israel.

- **Definition of Witchcraft**

Witchcraft includes speaking curses, white magic, black magic, psychics and palm readings, horoscopes, Ouija boards, seances, consulting tea leaves, transcendental meditation, superstitions, fortune-telling, tarot cards, magic eight ball, sorcery, voodoo, casting spells, consulting shaman or practitioners of magic, divination, and conjuring the dead.

Witchcraft also includes rebellion, word curses, incantations, and the works of the flesh, according to the Bible.

Witchcraft/sorcery is listed as a work of the flesh in **Galatians 5:21**. Those who choose to practice witchcraft or the other works of the flesh will not inherit the kingdom of God.

**Deuteronomy 18:10-12** “Let no one be found among you who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft, or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the Lord.”

This is one of scripture’s strongest teaching on how God feels about us being involved in any form of witchcraft. This is why the penalty is so high. God knowing how much we love our children, set a precedent to keep us away from any kind of witchcraft. This affiliation with witchcraft will contaminate our blood line for ten generations. So when someone tells you that all sin is the same, that is a false teaching. All sin does not carry generational attachments.

Jezebel is an archetype and example of witchcraft in the Old Testament. She dominated her husband, King Ahab. She manipulated and controlled many others. She ordered innocent people killed. She supported priests of the false god baal. When Elijah stood up for the Lord, she threatened to kill him (**1 Kings 19**).

King Saul rebelled against God's commandments. He deliberately disobeyed God. The prophet Samuel compared Saul's rebellion to witchcraft and his stubbornness to iniquity and idolatry (**I Samuel 15**).

King Saul again rebelled and sought the witch of Endor to call up Samuel from the dead (**I Samuel 28**).

## **God is Merciful in the Midst of Sin**

In His mercy, God still turns curses into blessings.

Daniel was a servant of God who knew the Word of God. He prayed to set the captives free, breaking generational curses on behalf of the people of Israel. Many of us have participated in what is known as a "Daniel fast", 21 days of fasting from delicate or preferred foods.

Daniel fasted and repented on behalf of himself, the other Jews in Babylon, and the iniquities of their ancestors.

**Daniel 9:16** " O Lord, in keeping with all your righteous acts, turn away your anger and your wrath from Jerusalem, your city, your holy hill. Our sins and the iniquities of our fathers have made Jerusalem and your people an object of scorn to all those around us."

Daniel knew that generational sin needed to be repented for.

Daniel had studied the word of the Lord as delivered by the prophet Jeremiah and realized the 70-year period of captivity of the Israelites should be ending. God told Jeremiah that King Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, would capture the Israelites. God used this ungodly ruler, even calling him His servant, to enslave God's people due to their disobedience.

**Jeremiah 43:10 "Then say to them, 'This is what the Lord Almighty, the God of Israel, says: I will send for my servant Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and I will set his throne over these stones I have buried here; he will spread his royal canopy above them.'"**

Daniel did not presume God would release the people of Israel without their acknowledgement of their sins and repentance. Daniel humbled himself. He sacrificed bodily comfort, fasted, and prayed more earnestly during 21 days of spiritual warfare and breakthrough for his people. He initiated his prayers with repentance for himself, the other Jews of his day, and their ancestors.

Repenting for the sins of the generations as well as for himself and his people resulted in a phenomenal spiritual victory.

Daniel's actual acknowledgement and repentance of sin together with God's promises of freedom produced the release from slavery of the people of Israel.

## **Jesus and the Ways of the Lord**

Jesus demonstrated intimacy with His heavenly Father and knowledge of His ways.

**Matthew 5:17 "Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them."**

**Luke 16:17 "It is easier for heaven and earth to disappear, than the least stroke of a pen to drop out of the Law."**

**John 14:31 "but the world must learn that I love the Father and do exactly what my Father has commanded me."**

As followers of Jesus, we should desire this close relationship with our heavenly Father. We should seek to know the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God. From the beginning, the Father has called His people to not be prideful, but to readily acknowledge sin and repent.

God resists the proud and gives grace to the humble. (See **Proverbs 3:34**).

This requirement has not changed for Christians. We must not be prideful or presumptuous.

**Isaiah 30:15a "This is what the Sovereign Lord, the Holy One of Israel says: "In repentance and rest is your salvation, in quietness and trust is your strength,..."**

**Matthew 3:8 "Produce fruit in keeping with repentance."**

For spiritual breakthroughs, we must acknowledge our sins and repent of them, both for our past generations and ourselves.

Nothing in God's Word exempts us from acknowledging the sins of our ancestors and repenting for their sins that have cursed us. When we repent, the blood of Jesus is able to take away the curses caused by our bloodline. He is faithful and just to forgive the sins that have affected us.

After repentance of sin, we are immediately set free. We are no longer liable for the sins of our family lines. All legal rights of the enemy are broken in the area of generational curses, and we no longer need to repent of these sins. Praise God for His provision!

We encourage everyone to recognize we all sin and fall short of the glory of God. He has made a way for us to come boldly to Him and not be ashamed. We repent of our personal sin, align with the Word "the prayer of a righteous person avails much."

**James 5:16 (NKJV) "Confess your trespasses to another, and pray one for another, that you may be healed. The effective, fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much."**

As you read the prayer below, repent sincerely and claim for yourself forgiveness of sin and freedom and deliverance from curses of your bloodlines.

## Prayers

### 1. Prayer to Break Generational Curses and Sins of the Bloodlines:

Dear Heavenly Father: Thank you that the blood of Jesus is able to take away all sin. I believe this and receive it now in Jesus' name. I pray forgiveness for the sins of my father, of that bloodline for all generations back, and I ask You to wash me clean now, by the blood of the Lamb.

I pray forgiveness for the sins of my mother, of that bloodline for all generations back, and I ask You to wash me clean now, by the blood of the Lamb. I receive Your forgiveness and believe that by Your blood I am cleansed from the sins of all my generational bloodlines.

I take the authority I have in my blood covenant with Jesus Christ, and I break all generational curses on my father's side all generations back, broken now, by the blood of the Lamb. I take this same authority and break all generational curses on my mother's side, all generations back, broken now, by the blood of the Lamb.

With this same authority I have under the blood covenant of salvation in Jesus, I break any spoken curses on my family bloodline. I break the power of all seals of silence and all vows of secrecy.

I take the same authority in the name and the blood of Jesus, and I break all covenants and contracts to satan including blood covenant contracts.

I pray forgiveness for the sins of my family line of all those things that happened in darkness, such as any attachment to slavery or any kind of persecution or mistreatment or abuse of any people groups or individuals, and I pray blessings on all descendants of the persecuted groups or individuals.

I pray forgiveness for the sin of all idolatries attached to the American Indian bloodline and break all related curses. I break any attachments to family superstitions and idolatries, ungodly beliefs, wives tales, luck charms, and rhyme curses in Jesus' name.

Thank you, Jesus, that Your word says, "Cursed is the one who hangs on the tree." You took our curses, and You took our sins, so that we can have life more abundantly, and we praise you for it. I receive by faith that now all generational sins and all generational curses are broken by the blood of the Lamb, in Jesus' Name. Amen.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

## 2. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
all heads of python with all python eggs;  
all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;  
all heads of rejection;  
all heads of fear;  
all heads of perversion;  
all heads of idolatry;  
all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
and, all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## Chapter Three: Soul Ties

### Testimonies

1. A modest Christian lady came for ministry. She struggled with a lack of joy and intimacy with her husband. Throughout her 25 years of marriage, she could not attain emotional closeness with him. She felt something was wrong with her and was deeply discouraged. She blamed herself. She knew there was a hindrance, although she did not know how to overcome it.

During ministry, she revealed that as a teenager, she had sexual relations with her uncle. As the oldest daughter of her parents, she formed a friendship with the youngest brother of one parent. He was only ten years older than she was. She felt flattered that an older man would be interested in her and pursue her. She liked the attention. When they became sexually intimate, she unknowingly formed a soul tie with her uncle. A few years later, she went to college, the uncle married, and after that, they never discussed their relationship. Eventually, she fell in love and married a young Christian man she met in college. In their marriage, she could not achieve the intimacy she desired. She never confessed the story of her uncle to anyone. She and her husband loved each other and had several children. Through the years, she never attained the closeness she had desired in her marriage.

As she came for ministry, she was able to understand the concept of soul ties. She realized that her relationship with her uncle had created an ungodly and unwanted soul tie. She did not know this Biblical truth, although she was a lifelong churchgoer.

She gladly prayed, repented of the sin of her perversion, broke the soul tie with her uncle, and immediately felt a release. She went home rejoicing.

In part, God's first curse against Eve was that her desire and longing would be for her husband. (See **Genesis 3:16**) God defines her "husband" as the first man with whom she had sexual intercourse.

This sweet lady wrote me a letter several months later. She testified of the joyful freedom in her increased marital intimacy. She thanked me for this teaching, which changed her life.

2. An elderly Christian widow was desperate for freedom in the Lord. In our first two meetings, I avoided the issue of ungodly soul ties because she was a long-time Christian and had been faithful to her one husband. Each time, she called me asking for more prayer because she knew something still hindered her intimacy with the Lord. Finally, in our third ministry session, she prayed the soul tie prayer for the first time. Immediately after that, she remembered that her grandfather had nicknamed her "Puddin". At two years old, her grandfather molested her. We cast out the tormenting spirits of incest, shame, and defilement. She was able to forgive, release, and bless her long-dead grandfather. She finally received the freedom and spiritual comfort she needed.

3. During ministry, a young man manifested a demon of homosexuality. When the demon manifested, it spoke to the man's mind. It proclaimed that its right to be in him came from a soul tie. The young man had no homosexual experiences or inclinations. He had engaged in sexual intercourse with a woman who had a previous sexual encounter with a homosexual. This act of perversion created a soul tie with the woman and opened him to the unclean spirit of homosexuality.

### **Soul Ties Are Real**

Biblical principles are spiritual law. The Bible shows us God's ways and His requirements for us. Spiritual law means what is written happens whether or not we believe or understand it. Some people choose to reject teachings from the Bible because they do not align with their ideas or opinions. When it has been written as scripture, it will be fulfilled. That is why we call it "spiritual law". These principles are true. God desires that we follow His ways. When we follow His ways and requirements, the result for our children and us is good.

**Deuteronomy 5:29 "Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear me and keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!"**

**Matthew 5:18 "I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished."**

Some people have created a system in life using a little Scripture in it. The other part of this system is how they can maintain their fleshly desires, and how they can keep what their flesh wants, yet remain in the appearance of being spiritual. This system shows that they are slaves to sin, and have not learned how to crucify their fleshly desires. One of the first gifts of the Holy Spirit is self-control. These people have a form of godliness, but deny it's power. They are denying the power to overcome. **II Timothy 3:5-7**

A lingering ungodly soul tie becomes an unredeemed area in one's life. Ungodly soul ties do not dissolve with time. Ungodly soul ties have been caused by some form of sin, often by the pursuit of perversion, whether by adultery, fornication or promiscuity. Some ungodly soul ties are acquired unwillingly through rape, incest, or molestation.

We must repent of our sins. We must ask God to forgive us of all thoughts, words, and deeds that He calls sin. We must be cleansed by the Blood of Jesus.

**1 John 1:9 "If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness."**

This is a wonderfully strong example of spiritual law. As we repent of sin in our lives, the written Word says He will forgive and cleanse us of the sin and purify us from all unrighteousness.

## Sacred Soul Tie between Husband and Wife

The most important soul tie is the bond between husband and wife formed through sexual intercourse. The souls of the new husband and wife are bound together, according to God's intention.

With a virginal couple, the bloodshed on the wedding night creates the blood covenant of marriage before God. (See **Deut.22:13-19** for an Old Testament example of the importance of the blood covenant of marriage.)

A Biblical principle stated numerous times in the Old and New Testaments involves the powerful covenant of marriage and the soul ties formed through sexual intercourse.

**Genesis 2:24 "For this reason, a man shall leave his father and his mother, and shall be joined to his wife; and they shall become one flesh."**

**Mark 10:8 "And the two will become one flesh. So, they are no longer two, but one."** See also **Matthew 19:5** and **Ephesians 5:31**.

From the beginning, God's plan for human beings has been for one man to marry one woman and together create a marriage covenant before God. He holds us accountable to His plan for marriage, sexuality, and procreation. These two individuals are called to remain married and stay together as long as they both shall live. God's view of your marriage is you and your first sexual partner. You create a covenant before God with that person. This covenant is a blood covenant of marriage in the eyes of God. If we break this covenant of marriage and have sexual relations with other partners, the Lord holds us responsible for the sin of adultery.

**Genesis 24:67 "Isaac brought her into the tent of his mother Sarah, and he married Rebekah. So, she became his wife, and he loved her; and Isaac was comforted after his mother's death."**

**Proverbs 2:17 "...who has left the partner of her youth and ignored the covenant she made before God."**

**Malachi 2:14 "You ask, 'Why?' It is because the Lord is acting as the witness between you and the wife of your youth, because you have broken faith with her, though she is your partner, the wife of your marriage covenant."**

Often, we are taught that marriage is the wedding service at a church or the courthouse. Man's law includes a marriage license, a service with vows to each other, and witnesses. This is man's opinion of marriage, not God's.

God's plan for mankind includes the formation of good and lasting soul ties. God's spiritual law prevails, whether or not we believe His Word. This is true even if we know the scriptures and choose to not obey through rebellion, or if we perish from a lack of knowledge. It is spiritual law, and it still prevails.

The Bible speaks of souls being knit together or being "one flesh."

A soul tie can draw and bind two souls together. The result may be good or evil, depending on how the soul tie is created.

God views the act of sexual intimacy to create the covenant of marriage before Him. He designed sexual intercourse for a man and his wife to enable them to create a lasting and personal covenant between themselves. Any sexual activity outside of this covenant made before God is adultery.

## Good Soul Ties

### 1. Blood Covenant of Marriage

The marital blood covenant undergirds and upholds the morality laws in **Deuteronomy 22:13-20**. The bride sheds blood with the breaking of her hymen during her first act of sexual intercourse. Proof of the shedding of her blood was kept as evidence of her virginity.

The ultimate good soul tie is created in marriage by following God's way.

#### **Biblical Examples of Good Soul Ties between Husband and Wife**

**Genesis 2:22-24** "Then the Lord God made a woman from the rib he had taken out of the man, and he brought her to the man. The man said, "This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called 'woman,' for she was taken out of man." For this reason, a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and they will become one flesh."

Early Biblical examples of marriage were created before the Law was given to Moses. The Lord gave Moses the Law on Mt. Sinai. Afterward, Moses delivered to the people God's laws of morality and marriage. **Deuteronomy 22** contains detailed rules about marriage and infidelity.

**Malachi 2:15** "Has not the Lord made them one? In flesh and spirit they are his. And why one? Because he was seeking godly offspring. So guard yourself in your spirit, and do not break faith with the wife of your youth."

Many people marry and later become saved. The Bible warns, do not be unequally yoked (See **II Corinthians 6:14**). However, in the event of only one partner becoming saved, the Lord offers mercy and grace to the whole family. The Lord works through the strength of the soul tie created between husband and wife.

**I Corinthians 7:14** "For the unbelieving husband has been sanctified through his wife, and the unbelieving wife has been sanctified through her believing husband. Otherwise, your children would be unclean, but as it is, they are holy."

### 2. Soul Ties Between Brother and Brother/Friend and Friend

Jesus describes unselfish love in **John 15:13** "Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friends."

**Ecclesiastes 4:9-12** "Two are better than one, because they have a good return for their work: If one falls down, his friend can help him up. But pity the man who falls and has no one to help him up! Also, if two lie down together, they keep warm. But how can one keep warm alone? Though one may be overpowered, two can defend themselves. A cord of three strands is not quickly broken."

**David and Jonathan: Covenant Brothers**

### **3. Non blood covenant/good soul tie attachments**

Vows can also bind people together.

**1 Samuel 18:1** "After David had finished talking with Saul, Jonathan became one in spirit with David, and he loved him as himself."

**1 Samuel 20:17** "And Jonathan had David reaffirm his oath out of love for him, because he loved him as he loved himself."

Vows, commitments, and agreements can bind the soul.

People may make vows that bind the soul but have nothing to do with sexual activity. There is power in oaths and vows.

**Proverbs 18:20-21** "From the fruit of his mouth a man's stomach is filled; with the harvest from his lips he is satisfied. The tongue has the power of life and death and those who love it will eat its fruit."

**Numbers 30:2** "When a man makes a vow to the Lord or takes an oath to obligate himself by a pledge, he must not break his word but must do everything he said."

God has created us with the ability to form lasting attachments and wholesome relationships with Him and with our spouses, families, and suitable friends. These are good ties between the souls of husband and wife, parent and child, brother with brother, and between Christian friends.

### **Nonblood Covenant/Bad Soul Tie Attachments**

Jesus taught in **Matthew 5:27-29**, "You have heard that it was said, 'You shall not commit adultery. But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman lustfully has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye causes you to sin, gouge it out and throw it away. It is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to be thrown into hell.'"

- **Power and Effects of Ungodly Soul Ties**

Ungodly soul ties download demonic influences into a person's life from the sexual partner. Remember God's Word is spiritual law. The two become one. Ungodly soul ties cause many problems and should be broken. Acknowledgement of sin and repentance are mighty weapons God gives us to break these attachments and rights to the enemy. Other mighty weapons include the Blood of Jesus, the Name of Jesus, and the Word of God.

Problems caused by ungodly soul ties include, but are not limited to, the following:

1. Mental infirmities include confusion, bipolar, manic, depression, schizophrenia, hearing voices, mental chatter, chronic indecision, suicidal thoughts, double-mindedness, hopelessness, and other mental issues;
2. Physical infirmities include, but are not limited to, fatal diseases, cancer, diabetes, blood disorders, autoimmune deficiencies, disabilities in the physical body, new sicknesses unknown in the family line, weakness, and chronic health problems, and other diseases;
3. Homosexuality (male and female);
4. Sexual abuse of others, including pedophilia, incest, and other sexual perversions (often repeats the perpetrator's own defilement);
5. Inability to form healthy relationships, reoccurring thought patterns, trauma, emotional bondage, dependencies, judgments, unforgiveness, bitterness, resentments, need to be in control, extreme self-control to prevent further pain in relationships;
6. Inability to trust others or discern the true motives of others, distorted discernment;
7. Addictions, including, but not limited to, bondage to alcohol, nicotine, pain killers, various legal and illegal drugs, masturbation, pornography, promiscuity, and sexual bondage, and other numbing actions;
8. Prostitution;
9. Influence and distortions in thought life, including the inability to change one's behavior patterns, enslaving thoughts, vain imaginations, and fantasy; and,
10. Influence and distortions in emotional life, including extreme emotional demands, emotional longings, anger and fits of rage, revenge, violence, altered states of mind, and plunging into deeper levels of depravity.

## Biblical Examples of Ungodly Soul Ties

- **Old Testament Examples**

An ungodly and undesired soul tie is created by fornication, rape, incest, molestation, or other sexual intercourse outside of marriage.

**Genesis 34:1-3** "Now Dinah, the daughter of Leah had borne to Jacob, went out to visit the women of the land. When Shechem the son of Hamor the Hivite, the ruler of that area, saw her, he took her and violated her. His heart was drawn to Dinah daughter of Jacob, and he loved the girl and spoke tenderly to her."

Another example of an ungodly soul tie is Amnon. He lusted after his half-sister Tamar, raped her, and after that, immediately hated her. (See **2 Samuel 13**).

- **New Testament Example of Ungodly Soul Ties**

**I Corinthians 6:16** "Do you not know that he who unites himself with a prostitute is one with her in body? For it is said, 'The two will become one flesh.'"

## Preventing Ungodly Soul Ties

**Job 31:1** "I made a covenant with my eyes not to look lustfully at a young woman."

**Healing comes with repentance of sin and the dissolution of the ungodly soul ties.**

Intense healing can come to people who are willing to break ungodly soul ties. When they learn of God's ways and become ready to break these soul ties, they can receive healing.

When a person repents of the sin of perversion, forgives the people who sinned against him or her, and releases and blesses them, then soul ties can be easily broken and healing flows into the person's body. The forgive, release, and bless method should be used for the breaking of all ungodly soul tie attachments. There are many Biblical teachings on blessing those who have despitely used us and praying for those who have persecuted us.

**Luke 6:28** "Bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you."

Many people are forced into sexual intimacy. This includes sexual abuse in childhood and rape. Because of God's law of "the two become one," even an unwilling sexual partner forms a soul tie with the sexual abuser. Abuse can happen even between family members. Sexual abuse often causes the victim to hate the perpetrator. Self-condemnation often reigns in the victim's life. Complete forgiveness is impossible so long as the soul tie binds the victim to hatred and judgment.

To the victim of sexual abuse, soul ties still need to be broken. The area of repentance in their life would be attached to harboring anger, judgment and unforgiveness toward their perpetrator. With the soul ties being broken and with the

process of renewal of the mind beginning, this enables them to have the ability to be able to bless those who have despitefully used them and to pray for those who have persecuted them. All victims of sexual abuse can receive full freedom and healing. Where the enemy once had a legal right to affect us in these areas, that right has been broken. It has become revealed, exposed, redeemed, repented for, and released. All attachments of the “two becoming one” are broken.

When the victim is freed of the bondage of ungodly soul ties, he or she can forgive, release, and bless the perpetrator. The victim becomes released from self-condemnation.

When a person repents of the sin of idolatry attached to the pursuit of perversion, a deeper level of cleansing, healing, and deliverance occurs. (See **Jeremiah 2:20-25** and the Prayer to Break Soul Ties.)

The Lord will heal the physical body, cleanse, and restore the soul, including emotions. This is the direct result of repentance of sexual activity outside of marriage.

Please note we do not seek to break wholesome soul ties created by following the Lord's ways.

Healing occurs when soul ties have been repented for and broken. The rights the enemy had in our lives are redeemed through repentance of sin and the blood of Jesus. It will no longer have the authority to affect us.

Effective healing ministry must include teaching to reveal Biblical truth about ungodly soul ties. Biblical principles lead us to forgive, release, and bless those who have hurt us.

Application of Biblical principles renews the mind. Renewal of the mind means you no longer think the same. Your mind and your thought processes are new in Christ. Your thoughts align with the Word of God.

**2 Corinthians 10:3-5 “For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”**

We obey what the Word says. Obedience brings the renewal of the mind. What used to be a stumbling block no longer has authority over you.

**Romans 12:2 "Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is - his good, pleasing and perfect will."**

As a victim of sexual abuse is healed and delivered, he or she can see the abuser with greater understanding and compassion.

Example: For victims of incest, when the soul tie is broken and the sexual abuse victim is healed, he or she can form a more acceptable Godly response and relationship with the abuser. The victim no longer feels sexually obligated or bound in an unwholesome way to the family member. The breaking of the soul tie frees the victim. With incest, the recipient of the abuse is often conflicted because hatred and fear are mixed with the natural love for a family member. This conflict is more substantial when the perpetrator is a person in authority, such as the father.

Many times, sexual abusers are prior victims of sexual abuse themselves and have become demonized.

**Ephesians 6:12 "For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms."**

Once a soul tie is broken, the right to the attached demonics no longer influences us. As we speak to the demonics attached, they must leave. (See the Prayer to Remove Demonics). The victim is no longer one with the abuser and is freed. The person is on the path to renewal of the mind, along with physical and emotional healing.

Until full healing and restoration occurs, there is a continuing requirement for sexual abuse victims to forgive, release, and bless the person who has harmed you. This also includes perpetrators that are deceased. When familiar ungodly thought processes return such as a victim mindset, judgement, hatred and unforgiveness, renewal commands us to forgive, release and bless. (See the chapter on Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy.) This work of forgiveness and blessing is between you and God. It is our opportunity to practice Biblical principles and be obedient to His requirements.

Abuse victims may have unhealthy soul ties blended with alter personalities. Alters are formed to help a victim deal with the trauma involved in sexual abuse. Releasing alters involves breaking soul ties. (See the chapter on Alters.)

### **Additional Teaching on Spiritual Law and Demonic Rights**

We become liable for the demonic rights attached to our sexual partners. Remember the spiritual law that states the "two become one" in sexual intercourse.

For example, if a person has sexual relations with a member of Freemasonry (or a descendant), those unclean rights attach themselves to the person who is not in Freemasonry. The curses attach to the third or fourth generation of the Freemason's family line. (See chapter on Freemasonry.)

**Deuteronomy 5:9 "You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me."**

If people knew the terrible repercussions of taking on these demonic rights, they would be more careful to maintain sexual purity and choose a marriage partner who maintained sexual innocence.

For example, a person develops an illness that has never appeared in their family history. They possibly received the demonic right of that illness from a sexual partner. "The two have become one."

A man who fell into sexual sin committed fornication with a woman who was from a Gypsy ancestry. He began to hear a voice in his head. For three years after that, he listened to this voice cursing, speaking profanities against God, and taking the Name of the Lord of vain. He did not want to hear or think these blasphemies, so he begged God to take away the demonic voice. With teaching on soul ties, he learned this terrible condition resulted from his sexual encounter with the woman whose family had a history of cursing God. When he broke the soul tie with the Gypsy woman, he was freed from the demonic voice.

Unlike prior generations in our nation, our 21st-century culture does not warn us to avoid promiscuity. Perversion is now celebrated in media and many national institutions. The Bible offers truth and life, while our secular culture provides death.

Even though God warns us to fear Him and follow His ways, the world does not follow his pattern.

**Isaiah 5:20-21 "Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter. Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes and clever in their own sight."**

**James 4:4 "You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God."**

The Church must teach these truths. We must instruct Christians on how to live victoriously. It is the Christian Church's responsibility to teach the Biblical principles of sexual purity. It is also the Church's obligation to teach the validity of soul tie attachments. We cannot expect the secular culture to teach Godly principles.

Please read through these three prayers and expect to receive freedom from Ungodly soul tie attachments.

## Prayers

### 1. Prayer to Break Ungodly Soul Ties

Father, in the name of Jesus, I submit my soul, my desires, my will, and my emotions to the Holy Spirit and Your Word. I confess as sin all of my sexual relationships before marriage and any sexual relationships outside of marriage. I confess as sin all ungodly relationships involving any part of me, whether spirit, soul, or body.

Father, I thank You for giving me the keys of Your kingdom and the keys of spiritual authority. What I bind is bound, and what I loose is loosed (**Matthew 16:19**). I ask You to loosen from me all soul ties to past sexual partners and ungodly relationships in Jesus' name. Please uproot all tentacles of sexual bondage, emotional longings, dependencies, vain imaginations, enslaving thoughts, and thought patterns. I bind, renounce, and resist any evil spirits that have been reinforced through those soul ties or may have been transferred to me through ungodly associations or promiscuity.

I also repent of the sin of the idolatry attached to my pursuit of perversion. **Jeremiah 2:20-25** says that my Heavenly Father's perception of this perversion that I have been pursuing is that I will not serve him, and I love foreign gods, and I must go after them. Therefore, I repent of the sin of this idolatry, and I apply the blood of Jesus to it now.

I submit to the Lord Jesus Christ and to His Word that tells me that I must forgive so that I will be forgiven. I repent of the sin of unforgiveness and judgment toward the people who have violated me sexually due to incest, molestation, or rape. I choose to forgive and bless them, and I break any soul tie attachments to these people in Jesus' name.

Please cleanse my soul with Your blood, renew my mind, and help me to forget all illicit unions so that I am free to give myself, body, soul, and spirit, totally to You. Father, I receive Your forgiveness for all past sins of ungodly soul ties and unrighteous sexual activity. I believe that by Your grace, I am forgiven. Thank You for remembering my sins no more and for cleansing me from all unrighteousness. I commit myself totally to You. By Your grace, please keep me holy in my spirit, soul, and body, as I choose to renew my mind in Christ (**Romans 12:1-2**). In the Name of Jesus, I pray. Amen.

## 2. Prayer to Release and Remove Ungodly Thought Processes, Mindsets, Devices, Defense Mechanisms, and Wrong or Unbiblical Reactions

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_ ask You to forgive me for the sin of failing to cast my cares upon You because I did not know how to cast my cares upon You. There have been times in my life when I suffered from a lack of knowledge of knowing how to handle life's situations, difficulties, decisions, traumas, and not casting my cares upon Jesus as Your Word says to do. I confess I have used ungodly thought processes, mindsets, devices, defense mechanisms, and wrong or unbiblical reactions. I confess that I sought to handle and control my own problems in my own ways. I devised methods and systems for my self-preservation. Now, I choose to ask You, Lord, to gather and remove the devices I have created and used to get through life's difficult circumstances. I repent for the control I used in creating these devices instead of trusting in You. I release all control, anger, revenge, unforgiveness, and judgments, and all altered states of mind into which I entered to handle trauma in my life. I relinquish my self-preservation, and I trust You for my life and choices.

I release to You all trauma, known and unknown. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondage, enslaving thought patterns, and dependencies in the name of Jesus Christ. I now purpose in my heart not to reenter these altered states of mind, devices, and mindsets that I have become accustomed to using.

I pray in the name of Jesus that You give me the renewal of mind to recognize these devices when they reappear due to life's circumstances. I release to You all disappointment, bitterness, and resentment about my past. I choose to renew my mind through the ongoing study of Your Word. I choose Your truth instead of altered states of mind that have caused me to revisit painful feelings or paralyze and distort my response to abuse or other behavior patterns toward me.

So, I speak to all altered states of mind, ungodly thought processes, mindsets, defense mechanisms, devices, and conditioned reactions. I command all such devices to align themselves with the Word of God and release their power over me, my mind, my emotions, my personality, and align with my will in the name of Jesus Christ. I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deut. 28:13**) to have Jesus Christ and Your Holy Spirit come into me and restore my soul. I forgive, release, and bless everyone who has hurt, abused, or misled me. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people. I ask You to bless them and give them what they need. Please bring me into a place where I am fully restored and made whole in spirit, soul, and body. I ask You to renew my mind so that I will not return to these old ways of thinking.

I thank You for teaching me to take captive every thought to make it obedient to Jesus Christ (**2 Corinthians 10:5**). I ask You to give me the renewed ability to maintain this fresh way of thinking for my new godly lifestyle.

According to James 1, I can ask You, Lord, for wisdom, and You will give generously to all without finding fault. I ask that You give me the wisdom to maintain

godly thought processes in this new season of my life and not return to the old, ungodly thought processes.

I desire that all of me be able to worship You in spirit and truth (**John 4:23-24**). I desire to worship You with a sound mind, undivided heart, and clarity. I thank You and ask these things in the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

### 3. Prayer to Remove Demonic

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
 all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
 all heads of python with all python eggs;  
 all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
 all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;  
 all heads of rejection;  
 all heads of fear;  
 all heads of perversion;  
 all heads of idolatry;  
 all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
 and, all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.



## Chapter Four: Freemasonry

### Healing and Deliverance From Consequences of Freemasonry

Brenda, a woman minister, was miserably afflicted with allergies and asthma. She had taken Benadryl for more than a decade. She suffered from asthma and allergies to dust, cat dander, and other allergens. Both her grandfather and her husband's grandfather were 32<sup>nd</sup> degree Masons. One of the first consequences of joining Freemasonry and taking the initial oaths and vow of silence is an attachment in the spiritual realm to the spirit of consumption. The person joining Freemasonry gives satan a legal right to inflict sickness upon him, his sexual partners, and his descendants to the third and fourth generation.

Brenda's skin was red and swollen from "hives" (urticaria) when we came together to pray. As she progressed through the Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments, she felt changes occur. Her skin tingled, and she felt as if things were moving up and down her back against her skin. I helped her to break the oaths and curses associated with all 33 degrees of Freemasonry. She read this Prayer in its entirety. The spirit of consumption, allergies, and hives left her.

During the prayer session, the enemy fought and resisted her. The swelling in her skin rose and diminished during the prayer session. As she continued to rebuke the devil, the hives disappeared. At the end of the day, Brenda was healed of all allergies and asthma. She stopped taking Benadryl because Jesus healed her and set her free.

Neither Brenda nor her husband was involved in Freemasonry. She, her husband, and their children were afflicted with the consequences of Freemasonry through bloodline, or generational, curses. In Brenda's family, these afflictions included her husband's addiction to smoking and their children's severe allergies and asthma.

After Brenda received ministry, her husband prayed the Prayer for healing and deliverance. For the first time, he was able to quit smoking after many unsuccessful attempts.

- **Encouragement**

I seek to encourage people who have been deceived by Freemasonry or are suffering from its consequences. The Lord offers the opportunity for complete healing and deliverance through this teaching. However, a detailed study of the doctrines and history of Freemasonry is beyond the scope of this book. I am not here to proclaim that people involved with Freemasonry are bad people. But I am here to proclaim that they are deceived.

Many well-meaning people have been drawn into Freemasonry. Some sought opportunities to serve and felt attracted to the Masonic charitable works. Some joined because they felt strong expectancy from others, or they respected older family members who were Masons. They felt pressured to join “the Lodge”.

Some were deceived because Masons are often faithful attendees or even pastors of Christian churches.

Others responded to the lure of belonging to an “inner circle” with a promise of secret power and knowledge that ordinary people cannot attain. One of the teachings of the Masonic lodge is that all members are above the people of the world. From the beginning, they are trained to think they are more perceptive and elite.

Scripture warns us against such deception. We hope those who might consider joining Freemasonry will be warned away from its dangers.

In **Matthew 24:4**, when the disciples asked about the end of the age, Jesus answered, **“Watch out that no one deceives you.”** (See also **Mark 13:5**.)

Many people blindly enter Freemasonry. They walk into bondage without clearly understanding the consequences. Freemasonry also gives the illusion that it is a godly doctrine. This is not so! Anyone can gather information and learn that Albert Pike, who was a Confederate general, and one of the highest Masonic leaders, was a satanist. Also, anytime man takes a created item that is manmade and gives it a spiritual function, it is a form of idolatry. This practice and use of these items, carry iniquity to the third and fourth generations of our bloodline.

**Exodus 20:4-6**

- **Consequences of Freemasonry**

The effects of Freemasonry extend to the participant, all his sexual partners, his bloodline descendants to the third and fourth generation, and their sexual partners. Remember the spiritual law is written that in intimacy, the two become one.

There are diseases, infirmities, and addictions associated with Freemasonry. We see healings in former Masons and people like Brenda, who was born into the bloodline of a Mason.

Equally in need of healing and deliverance from the effects of Freemasonry are people sexually active with Masons and former Masons and their descendants. (**“The two become one.” Genesis 2:24.** See chapter on Soul Ties.)

Curses can extend to the third and fourth generation of those involved in Freemasonry.

The second of the Ten Commandments warns us about idolatry.

**Exodus 20:4-6** “You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below. You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.”

- **Infirmities Introduced**

A spirit of consumption is invited into the new lodge member. When he takes the first vow of silence, the cable tow/noose is pulled tight around his neck. This happens while the initiate vows that he will never speak to his family or other outsiders about the activities within the Freemasonry Lodge. He is not warned that spirits of infirmity are being invited into himself and his bloodline.

Following is a list of some, though not all, diseases, infirmities, and physical, mental, and spiritual conditions that are foreseeable consequences of involvement in Freemasonry:

1. Interference with the ability to breathe freely, any infirmities tending to steal one’s breath:
  - a. addictions, particularly smoking
  - b. emphysema
  - c. chronic obstructive pulmonary disease (COPD)
  - d. asthma and related allergies
  - e. obesity
  - f. any disease that can steal one’s breath

The demonic spirit attached to these infirmities is the spirit of consumption. This spirit enters upon use of the regalia of the item called the cable-tow. This is a hangman’s noose tightened around the neck of the recipient as they speak their first oath and vow of secrecy.

2. Food allergies, digestive diseases, including colic, infant digestive diseases, lactose intolerance, colitis, irritable bowel syndrome, and diverticulitis
3. Heart disease, congestive heart failure, fluid on the lungs, bronchitis in children, heart murmur, atrial fibrillation, and stroke
4. Blood diseases, clogging, aneurisms and other blood vessel issues
5. Accumulative spiritual weight from Aprons, Regalia and Oaths with each additional degree; back pain is the physical manifestation of this accumulative weight
6. Spiritual blindness (during the Masonic vow connected with the “hoodwink”)
  - a. some in Freemasonry resist Biblical truth
  - b. some struggle to sense the presence of the Lord

- c. some have only a muted faith to receive the deeper things of God (Baptism of the Holy Spirit, miracles, healings, deliverance)
  - d. some faithfully attend weekly church services, but fall asleep during the sermons (spirit of slumber)
  - e. some are unable to mature further in their Christian walk after joining Freemasonry
7. Lust: the corrupting nature of idolatry together with the secrecy of the all-male Lodge promotes perversion

God warns us of the consequences of idolatry.

**Psalm 81:12 “So I gave them over to their stubborn hearts to follow their own devices.”**

- **Healing and Deliverance from Consequences of Freemasonry**

To experience healing and deliverance, a person must repent for his involvement in Freemasonry and systematically renounce the oaths, vows, and curses associated with all 33 degrees.

It is not sufficient to stop attending Lodge meetings and cease paying Lodge membership dues. Such choices cannot address the spiritual condition or resulting oppression caused by Masonic involvement. We have learned that satan is a legalist. Wherever, he has a legal right to stay attached to us, he will not leave. Each degree of participation in the Masonic lodge needs to be renounced individually.

The Lord requires that a man humbly repent and acknowledge his sin and rebellion.

**II Corinthians 7:10 “Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret, but worldly sorrow brings death.”**

The person must openly confess the sin of involvement in Freemasonry and renounce his personal affiliation or his connection to Freemasonry through sexual relations or bloodlines. This means that many of us are attached to the Masonic curses through soul ties and sexuality. Most don't even know that there is a legal right to sickness and oppression with this sexuality.

Repentance and renunciation of Freemasonry oaths, vows, and curses can break the legal right of the enemy to oppress us in spirit, soul, or body.

The person must accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior. They must repent of their sins and renounce the oaths and vows of Freemasonry for each degree. Then, they can receive dramatic physical, mental, and spiritual healing and blessings from the Lord.

The Prayer at the end of this teaching provides a method by which one can completely break the vows, oaths, and curses of Freemasonry.

The Lord will perform deep and wonderful works in the person who comes to Him:

1. The Lord heals. This person is healed and delivered of physical afflictions, including heart issues and breathing restrictions, including the restoration of ability to breathe freely and deeply.
2. The Lord frees us. He brings liberty when demonic legal rights are broken. Bondage and addictions are defeated, including addictions to smoking, food, pornography, alcohol, and drugs.
3. The Lord reveals truth. Jesus is the “Light of the world.” Spiritual blindness introduced with the hoodwink at the First Degree of Freemasonry is removed. The demonic “veil” is lifted. The person’s spiritual eyes are opened. Their mind is renewed, and he or she is able to receive the deeper things of God.
4. Jesus is the “Word of God.” (John 1:14; Rev. 19:13) Hearing the voice of the Lord becomes easier. The man hungers for the Word. He studies the Bible with comprehension and joy.
5. Jesus is the “Way, the Truth, and the Life.” No man comes to the Father except through Jesus. Mental clarity returns, and mental confusion vanishes.
6. **Matthew 11:30** “My yoke is easy and my burden is light.” Spiritual weights are lifted as the cumulative burdens of Masonic collars, aprons, and regalia are dislodged. Often, a person feels his back being healed and realigned. Physical back pain vanishes.

Jesus restores the soul. (See **Psalm 23**, “**He restores my soul.**”) The recipient becomes sensitive to the work of the Holy Spirit, feels conviction of sin, acknowledges, and repents of other sins, and begins a renewal of the mind and spiritual growth.

### **Hidden Spiritual Nature of Freemasonry**

The prophet Daniel describes mysteries revealed to him by the God of heaven.

**Daniel 2:22** “He reveals deep and hidden things; he knows what lies in darkness, and light dwells with him.” (See also **Job 12:22**; **Job 28:11.**)

What is Freemasonry? Histories of “Freemasonry” are available for separate study. Archeological sites in Egypt, Greece, Rome, and Stonehenge reveal the remarkable skills of ancient stonemasons. By the 11<sup>th</sup> and 12<sup>th</sup> centuries, European stonemasons had organized into groups of skilled masons.

A European Mason worked initially as an Apprentice, later Journeyman, and ultimately as Master Mason, if he became sufficiently skilled and qualified. By the 14<sup>th</sup> century, groups of “Free Masons” regulated the qualifications of stonemasons and functioned somewhat like a modern trade union.

Tragically, “Freemasonry” has evolved into a dangerous occultic belief system, having nothing to do with cutting stones for buildings. It uses construction items as symbols for spiritual concepts but has become an organization far from its original intent. It was contaminated by a Confederate general who was a satanic worshipper named Albert Pike. He brought in demonic deceptions that did not align with the Word of God, eventually training Masonic Lodge members that a tripart deity named Jah-Bull-On designed and created the universe. More teaching on this is later in the chapter; however, this book is not designed to teach all aspects of Masonic doctrine.

Freemasonry is for men. Related organizations are Eastern Star (women), DeMolay (young men and boys), Job’s Daughters and Rainbow Girls (both for young women and girls).

Bible-believing Christians will detect two aspects of modern Freemasonry that are clear signs of danger: (1) emphasis on secrecy, including secret meetings, with vows and oaths spoken; and (2) regalia, which is clothing or other items that becomes an idol when assigned a spiritual function.

### **Freemasonry Oaths: Contrary to Scripture**

The Bible commands us not to take oaths.

**Matthew 5:33-37** “Again, you have heard that it was said to the people long ago, ‘Do not break your oath, but keep the oaths you have made to the Lord.’ But I tell you, do not swear an oath at all: either by heaven, for it is God’s throne; or by the earth, for it is his footstool; or by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the Great King. And do not swear by your head, for you cannot make even one hair white or black. Simply let your ‘Yes’ be ‘Yes’, and your ‘No’[be] ‘No’; anything beyond this comes from the evil one.”

**James 5:12** “Above all, my brothers, do not swear — not by heaven or by earth or by anything else. Let your ‘Yes’ be yes, and your ‘No,’ no, or you will be condemned.”

**Leviticus 5:4-5** “Or if a person thoughtlessly takes an oath to do anything, whether good or evil - in any matter one might carelessly swear about - even though he is unaware of it, in any case when he learns of it he will be guilty. When anyone is guilty in any of these ways, he must confess in what way he has sinned.”

**Proverbs 18:21 (AMP)** “Death and life are in the power of the tongue, And those who love it and indulge it will eat its fruit and bear the consequences of their words.”

- **Oaths are Required of Every Initiate into Freemasonry.**

In the First Degree ceremony, the newcomer is guided into a vulnerable physical situation. During this initiation, he is required to kneel in an uncomfortable posture. This is a tactic used to manipulate him. Psychologically, it is intended to train him to trust fellow Lodge members. He will receive acceptance when he blindly follows and obeys.

The initiate is blindfolded (the “hoodwink”), required to strip to the waist, and a noose is placed around his neck (the “cable tow”). He is pricked in his left breast to draw blood with the sharp point of an instrument (the “compass”, the third piece of regalia used in the First-Degree ceremony).

If we could observe the ceremony, which an outsider cannot, we would see the newcomer kneeling awkwardly. He is blindfolded, partially naked (bare breasted), pricked in the left breast until bleeding, with a noose around his neck. All these distractions are inflicted in front of the Lodge leadership and audience of other Masons who have undergone the same ritual. He is distracted by discomfort, pain, uncertainty, embarrassment, and fear.

In the midst of these intentional distractions, he is required to speak and agree with oaths that he has never heard before and has no time to analyze. He is directed to speak the oaths aloud, repeating after the Lodge leader.

If at any time he wants to stop, he has the humiliating choice to either disrupt the ceremony by refusing to continue, or quickly complete the oaths to finish the ceremony.

To escape the oaths, he would have to cast off the blindfold, pull off the noose from around his neck, try to cover his body, and leave the building.

The entire ritual is designed to manipulate him into completing the oaths even if he has doubts. The hidden purpose is to lead him into the spiritual bondage created by the oaths and curses.

With the completion of the oaths, spiritual blindness descends upon him. The blindfold may be removed from his face, but he will no longer be able to see the spiritual truth of what he has done. Instruction by the Lodge Leader to the Apprentice

As quoted from an “Apprentice Degree” ceremony, the Leader advises the initiate, *“I am commanded to receive you on the point of a sharp instrument, piercing your naked left breast, which is to teach you that as this is an instrument of torture to the flesh, so should the recollection thereof be to your mind and conscience, should you ever reveal the secrets of Freemasonry unlawfully.”*

This is the Oath spoken by the initiate:

*“Of my own free will and accord, in presence of Almighty God and this worshipful lodge of free and accepted Masons, erected to God and dedicated to the holy Saints John, do hereby and hereon, most solemnly and sincerely promise and swear, that I will always hail, ever conceal, and never reveal, any part or parts, art or arts, point or points, of the secret arts and mysteries, of ancient Freemasonry, which I have received, am about to receive, or may hereafter be instructed in, to any person or persons, in the known world; except it be to a true and lawful brother Mason, or within the body of a just and lawfully constituted lodge of such; and not unto him nor unto them, whom I shall hear so to be, but unto him and them, only, whom I shall find so to be; after strict trial, and due examination, or lawful information.*

*Furthermore, do I promise and swear, that I will not write, print, stamp, stain, hew, cut, carve, indent, paint or engrave it, on anything movable, or immovable, under the whole canopy of heaven; whereby or whereon, the least letter, figure, character, mark, stain, shadow, or resemblance of the same, may become legible, or intelligible to myself, or any other person, in the known world; whereby the secrets of Masonry may unlawfully be obtained through my unworthiness.*

*To all which I do most solemnly, and sincerely, promise and swear, without the least equivocation, mental reservation, or self-evasion of mind in me, whatever: binding myself under no less penalty than to have my throat cut across, from ear to ear, my tongue torn out by the roots, and my body buried in the rough sands of the sea, a cable-tow's length from the shore, at low water mark where the tide ebbs and flows twice in twenty-four hours; so help me, God, and keep me steadfast, in the due performance of the same.”*

- **Hoodwinked**

What the initiate does not see is the spiritual consequences of his oaths. He has been hoodwinked. The term “hoodwink” from Freemasonry has moved into our common speech. It means to be deceived, tricked, fooled, cheated, defrauded, or swindled. In some communities, “hoodwinked” means to be sucker punched from behind.

The initiate has fallen prey to the lies of the enemy, and he is now spiritually blinded.

**II Corinthians 4:4 “The god of this age (satan) has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.”**

He has sinned even though he may not be aware of his spiritual disobedience.

**Hosea 4:6 “My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge.”**

As he speaks the vow of secrecy about Freemasonry, he allows the cable tow (an article of regalia) to be tightened around his neck during the ceremony. This constriction potentially cuts off his breath.

This action also invites in the spirit of consumption (anything that takes one's breath, including asthma, allergies, tuberculosis, lung problems, addictions, and other infirmities).

By uttering the vows and disobeying God, he sins and brings this curse of infirmity upon himself and his family line to the third and fourth generations (See **Exodus 20:5**).

**I Corinthians 3:16-17** “Don't you know that you yourselves are God's temple and that God's Spirit lives in you? If anyone destroys God's temple, God will destroy him; for God's temple is sacred, and you are that temple.”

**Isaiah 5:20-21** “Woe to those who call evil good and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter. Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes, and clever in their own sight!”

- **Regalia is Idolatry**

Regalia is clothing and other decorative items and insignia that have specific meaning. Freemason regalia are manmade items with assigned spiritual meaning and function.

Each piece of Masonic regalia has specific spiritual symbolism concealed from beginners and lower-level members, but well-known to leaders and high-level members.

Masonic regalia contain powerful spiritual symbolism. In addition to the hoodwink, cable tow, and compass, there are collars, aprons, lambskin aprons, robes, belts, and other regalia.

The regalia are idols. Like anything else that is man-made and assigned a spiritual function, use of the Masonic regalia is idolatry.

These symbols are not Christian. Biblical truth is not contained in any of the Masonic regalia.

As the initiate speaks his secret vows, the regalia used in the ceremony attach spiritually to him. He takes to himself these “detestable things” warned about in **Deuteronomy 7:26**.

Masons continue to rebel against God's Word as they ascend “the Ladder” of Freemasonry, with as many as thirty-three degrees of vows, oaths, and increasingly evil Masonic regalia and idolatry. Regalia are often used as a counterfeit of Biblical principles.

**Deut. 7:25-26** “The images of their gods you are to burn in the fire. Do not covet the silver and gold on them, and do not take it for yourselves, or you will be ensnared by it, for it is detestable to the Lord your God. Do not bring a detestable thing into your house or you, like it, will be set apart for destruction. Utterly abhor and detest it, for it is set apart for destruction.”

The Lord warns His people against the creation of idols, graven images, and against association with people who worship or use idols. Why? God created us to acknowledge Him as Lord and Creator of all. We are created to be in close and constant fellowship with Him. Anything else is spiritual adultery, and He is a jealous God.

God created human beings with the ability and the need to worship. He created us to sing to Him, to know Him through worship, and to feel most alive when we are in His Presence.

People who rebel against God or do not know Him still hunger to worship. They will worship something lower than God if they do not acknowledge and worship God.

**Ephesians 5:5-14** “For of this you can be sure: No immoral, impure or greedy person — such a man is an idolater — has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. Let no one deceive you with empty words, for because of such things God’s wrath comes on those who are disobedient. Therefore, do not be partners with them. For you were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord. Live as children of light (for the fruit of the light consists in all goodness, righteousness and truth) and find out what pleases the Lord. Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them. For it is shameful even to mention what the disobedient do in secret. But everything exposed by the light becomes visible, for it is light that makes everything visible.”

- Do not rebel against God.

God wants to be our lifetime source. In the Bible, God reveals how many different ways He provides for us.

**Isaiah 46:3-4** “Listen to me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the house of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and gray hairs I am he, I am he who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you.”

God’s Word provides many warnings against idolatry. The essence of idolatry is when we go to another source, other than the Lord, for love, comfort, power, strength, recognition, security, or provision.

We have the obligation to learn God’s ways. As He warns against idolatry, we must renounce all idolatry, including the ways of other gods, powers, religions, and idols.

Regarding all idolatry, specifically including Masonic collars, aprons, and regalia, we do not have the option to tell God, "It does not mean that to me." God says such items are "detestable" to Him.

Freemasonry has developed a hierarchy of idol worship, including thirty-three degrees of ritual and regalia. In the highest levels, the regalia openly displays graven images of Egyptian gods and goddesses, hindu deities, including shiva, the "all seeing eye," and more. These images and their meanings are hidden from newcomers.

At the first degree, the initiate is exposed to three items of regalia, the Hoodwink, Cable Tow, and the Compass.

At the third degree, the Mason is exposed to a further idolatrous positioning of symbols, the "S" symbolizing shiva strapped over the Lamb. Shiva is the hindu goddess of the destruction of human flesh. The Lambskin skirt is pulled up on the body of the initiate. A thin belt is placed around his waist. When the belt buckle is fastened, it forms the shape of an "S". This "S" symbolizes the hindu god, shiva. Symbolically, the hindu god is affixed over the Lamb.

By the end of attaining the third Degree, the Mason is given the title of "Worshipful Master." The Mason is so deceived by this point that he participates in this heavily symbolic act without asking why the symbol of a heathen god is placed over the symbol of the Lamb.

At the twenty-eighth degree, a Mason has invested countless hours of memory work and Masonic activities. The intensity of deception has increased as he has moved higher.

By the twenty-eighth degree, there are open statements of opposition to Jesus Christ, such as, "You don't need the boy to get to the man."

**John 14:6 "Jesus answered, "I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me."**

At the twenty-eighth degree, he is required to deny our heavenly Father and Jesus Christ as the designer and creator of the heavens and the earth.

At this level, the Mason must agree that "Jah-Bull-On" is the "Grand Architect," designer, and creator of the universe. The word Jah-Bull-On is a combination of the words Yahweh and baal and osiris. If the Mason refuses to acknowledge this manmade deity, he is cast out of the Lodge.

The Lambskin presented to each (higher degree) Mason is said to represent "innocence" and is directed to be kept for the life of the Mason and buried with his "lifeless body." The lambskin presented to a thirty-second degree Mason bears symbols of numerous idols and foreign gods.

### Consequences of Leadership and Higher Degrees in Freemasonry

I worked briefly with a pastor who was also the leader at a Masonic Lodge. Before I knew he was involved in Freemasonry, we spoke about the Bible and the deeper things of God. He told me he was not ashamed of the Gospel. When he asked me about a mutual acquaintance, I told him the man's brother had died. I mentioned with regret the brother had died as an unrepentant thirty-third degree "Grand Worshipful Master."

When the pastor responded, he did so with a changed countenance. He leaned forward toward me, but also straightened his back. He spoke more softly but with great pride and force, as if he were sharing an important secret, "You are speaking to a Worshipful Master."

I was dismayed, and responded, "How can we serve the same King of Kings while you have the title of "Worshipful Master?" He did not answer that question and had nothing else to do with me after I made that statement.

In Freemasonry, there are counterfeit ceremonies that mimic the Christian experiences of salvation and baptism. Their counterfeit Baptism in the Holy Spirit is called becoming "ionized."

Masons frequently speak of being "raised". However, the Mason vows to trust other Masons and the teachings of Freemasonry, rather than to trust the Lord Jesus Christ, whose Name is never mentioned.

Jesus is not welcomed in Freemasonry. If a Mason mentions Jesus as Savior and God once or twice, he is reprimanded. The third time the Mason mentions Jesus as God and Savior, the Mason is ejected and permanently banned from the Lodge.

Freemasonry is a works-based religion, in which one must earn ultimate salvation. There is an incessant demand for work. Freemasonry demands many hours of time from a Mason to move from each degree to the next degree. Extensive memorization of Masonic phrases and teachings is required, as well as volunteer work. A Mason is robbed of hours away from his family and from potential Bible study and prayer.

God does not require us to work to be saved.

**Ephesians 2:8-9 "For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith — and this not from yourselves, it is the gift of God — not by works, so that no one can boast."**

### **Freemasonry Revealed as a Religion**

Members claim Freemasonry is a civic organization dedicated to good works. In truth, Freemasonry meets the functional definition of a religion, although no Mason would agree.

- 1 . Belief in deities.
- 2 . Use of sacred objects and regalia.
- 3 . Meetings at regular times in sacred places.
- 4 . Ritual acts focused on sacred objects.
- 5 . Moral code.
- 6 . Financial support of organization.
- 7 . Specialized forms of communication, including secret handshakes.

While there is superficial goodness and some fruit of good works, the foundation of Freemasonry is fraudulent. Use of Biblical terms and flawed analogies to Biblical experiences lend an aura of respectability to rituals that are deceptive and blasphemous.

### **Freemasonry Rights to the Demonic Can be Broken**

At the highest levels of Freemasonry, satanic elements become more evident. As a Mason moves through the degrees, demonic oppression deepens. He speaks more oaths and vows to follow false deities. This idolatry results in demon possession.

**2 Peter 2:1 “But there were also false prophets among the people, just as there will be false teachers among you. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord who bought them — bringing swift destruction on themselves.”**

Freemasonry is a destructive heresy. Many Masons at the higher levels are so deeply deceived they do not seek to escape.

But what if a Mason or someone affected by Freemasonry wants to be free? How can one escape the oppression of Freemasonry and the depths and layers of its demonic power?

To escape, the afflicted person confesses Freemasonry as sin and repents. Because of the layers of deception and idolatry, it is necessary to pray the Prayer below in detail. Break off every oath at every degree, one through thirty-three.

Obey all instructions and complete the Blood Covenant Salvation Prayer and the Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments in the order it is written.

Jesus Christ came to set the captives free.

**Luke 4:18-19** “The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor.”

Jesus set the captives free during His earthly ministry by healing the sick and infirm. He cast out demons and delivered people from evil. Jesus fulfilled the Messianic promises recorded in the Old Testament, including **Isaiah 61** which He quoted in **Luke 4:18-19**.

He completed His earthly ministry by offering Himself as a pure Lamb, a blood sacrifice for the sins of the world.

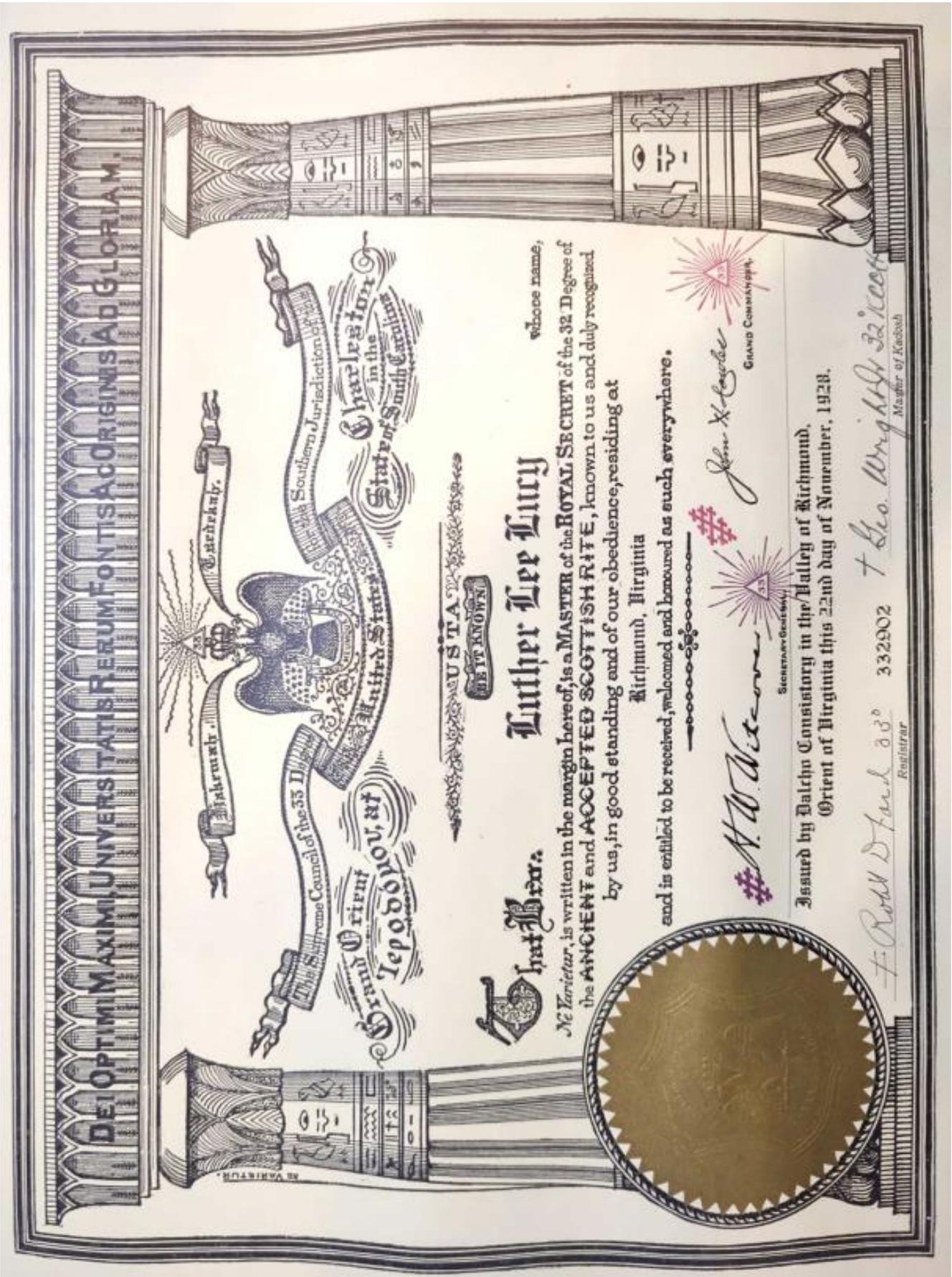
**I Peter 3:18a** “For Christ died for sins one for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God.”

**Hebrews 7:23-27** “Now there have been many of those priests, since death prevented them from continuing in office; but Jesus lives forever, he has a permanent priesthood. Therefore, he is able to save completely those who come to God through him, because he always lives to intercede for them. Such a high priest meets our need — one who is holy, blameless, pure, set apart from sinners, exalted above the heavens. Unlike the other high priests, he does not need to offer sacrifices day after day, first for his own sins, and then for the sins of the people. He sacrificed for their sins once for all when he offered himself.”

Following are photos of masonic certificates of achievement and eastern star memorabilia. All masonic certificates were issued to my grandfather. These were based on his levels of achievement. I want to expose the symbolism of Hindu, Egyptian and masonic deities and regalia used in these articles. The photos of the plate are for Eastern Star, the female version of the Free Masons. Each symbol has a representation and meaning. These meanings are unknown to the general public — only to lodge members. Anytime man creates an article and gives it a god-like function and purpose, it becomes an idol. As I have written in this chapter, I have known many wonderful people involved with these organizations. They are not bad people. They are only deceived.

My grandmother told us when my grandfather died, some of the Masonic Lodge members came to her house. They asked her where the scrolls were located. She did not know, so they rummaged through the house looking for them. They were not made for the public to see and were not meant to be kept by her. They wanted to bury them with him, but they couldn’t locate them and eventually gave up. I found these certificates rolled up like scrolls years later after my grandmother passed.





DEI OPTIMI MAXIMI, UNIVERSITATIS RERUM FONTIS ACRIGINIS AD GLORIAM

Charter of the 33rd Degree of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite, Freemasonry, Virginia, in the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States of America.

U S T A  
B E T T K N O W N

**W**hose name, **Luther Lee Lucy**, is written in the margin hereof, is a **MASTER OF THE ROYAL SECRET** of the 32 Degree of the **ANCIENT AND ACCEPTED SCOTTISH RITE**, known to us and duly recognized by us, in good standing and of our obedience, residing at **Richmond, Virginia** and is entitled to be received, welcomed and honored as such everywhere.

*John K. Lewis*  
GRAND COMPTROLLER

*A. W. Wilson*  
SECRETARY

Issued by Dalcho Consistory in the Valley of Richmond, Orient of Virginia this 22nd day of November, 1928.

332902 + Geo. Wright 321000  
Registrar  
Master of Esobah

No. 857698

*Al-Kutub*

*And if any... shall demand protection of this great law protection, that he may bear the word of the Prophet, and after word are him a soft ear that, that he may warn him again, strictly. Suran II.*

**The Imperial Council**  
OF THE  
**ANCIENT ARABIC ORDER**  
OF THE  
**Nobles Mystic Shrine**  
FOR NORTH AMERICA

*To all True and Faithful Nobles of the Mystic Shrine:*

*Know Ye that the Worthy Noble Luther Lee Lucy who hath signed his Name in the margin hereof, was regularly Received, Admitted and Constituted A Noble of the Mystic Shrine in*

ACCA Temple of RICHMOND, VA on the 10th day of MAR 1932

*and that he is duly Enrolled as*

*In Testimony Whereof We*

*and affixed the Seal of*

*The Imperial Council for North America*

**ATTEST:**

*Samuel H. Lee*  
Imperial Recorder

*Thomas J. Johnston*  
Imperial Potentate

*Luther Lee Lucy*  
Noble

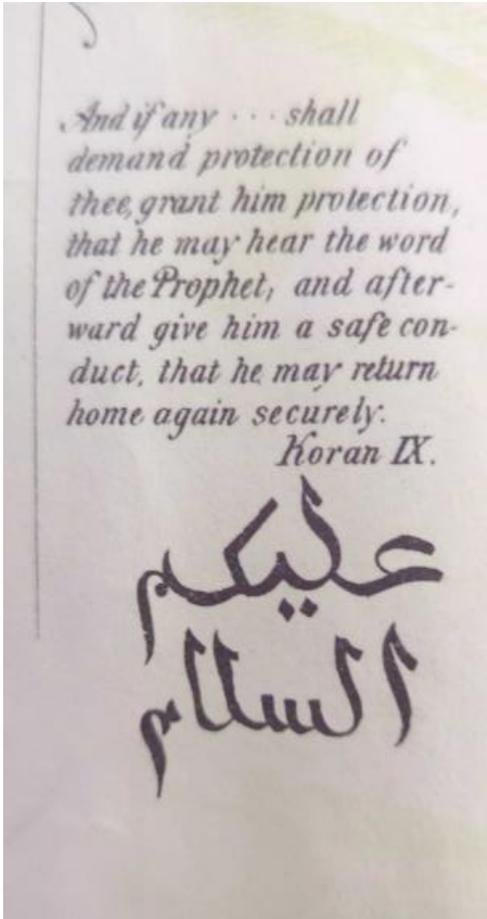
*is, at the date above written, a Member in good standing in this Temple.*

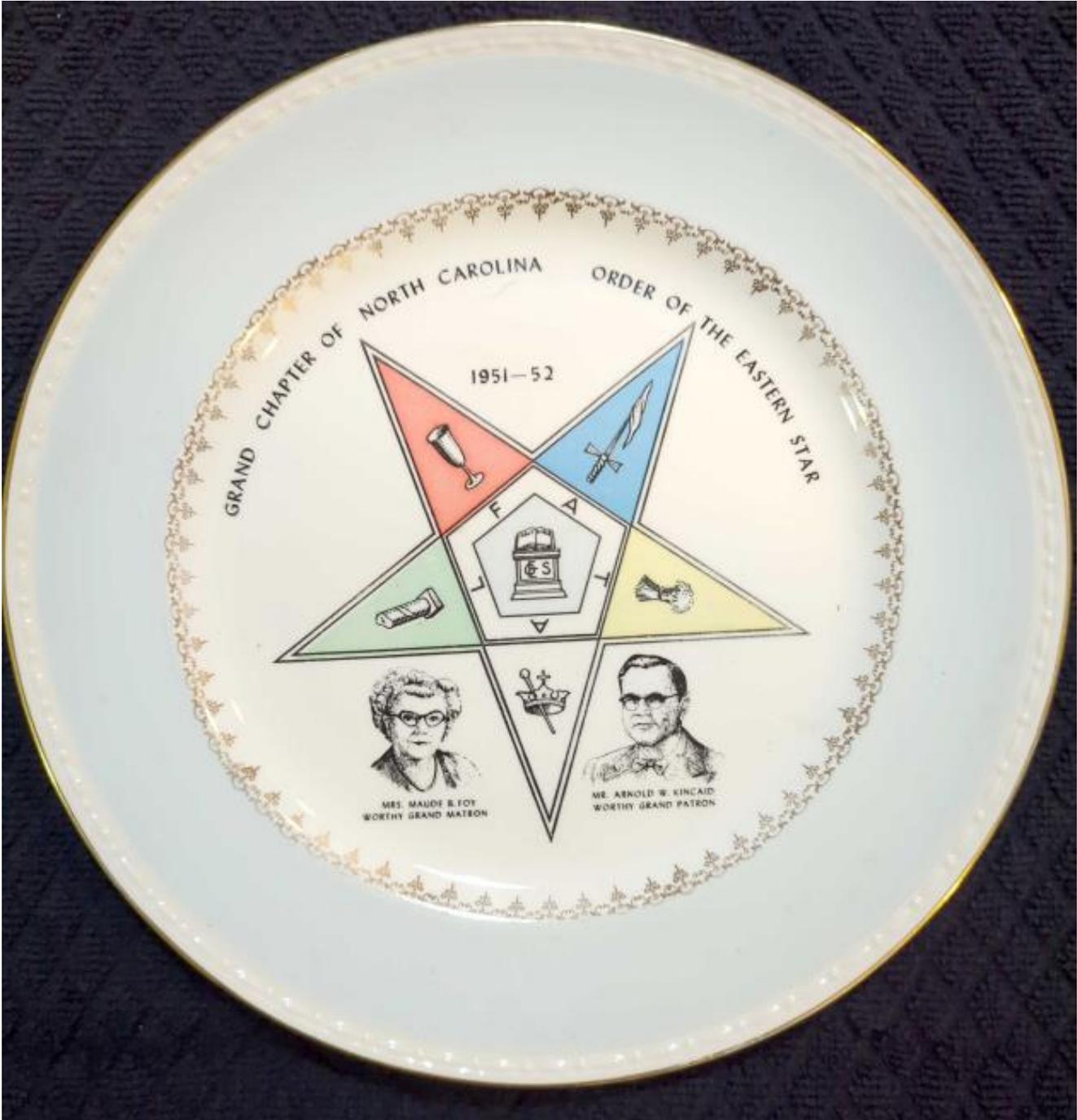
*Attest: Samuel H. Lee*

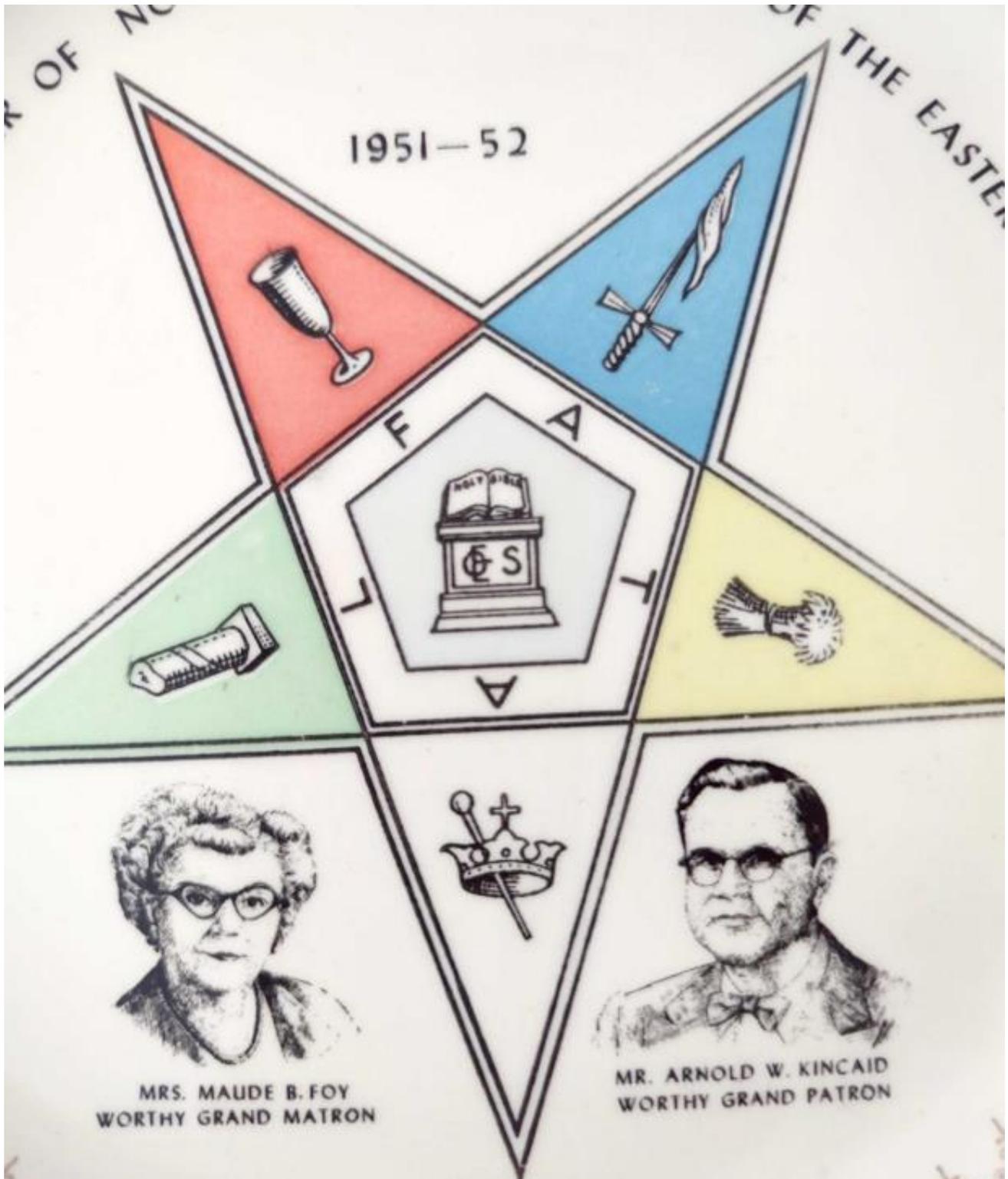
Recorder ACCA Temple




Close up of the writing on the side of the above certificate:







**Prayers**

**1. Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments**

Be sure you have accepted Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior.

Pray the “My Blood Covenant Salvation Prayer” before beginning this Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments.

Take time to meditate on the authority of your personal blood covenant of salvation through the finished work of Jesus Christ on the Cross and His shed blood. Jesus died for you, was buried, and rose again on the third day.

Jesus has won the victory for you.

Begin to bind specific spirits associated with Freemasonry:

“In the name of Jesus, I bind spirits of death, antichrist, deception, lust, sadism and sadistic tendencies, calamity, the spirit of satan, all spirits of lies, domination, manipulation, consumption, witchcraft, control, and all jezebel spirits, in the Name of Jesus.”

As you begin to pray the following Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments, it is vitally important to pray through each degree with the appropriate prayer.

Do not abbreviate any portion of this Prayer. Take no shortcuts.

Pray Exactly as Written	Degree of Masonry	Check off as completed
<b>For 1st degree only, say,</b> “I bind and cancel the cable toe, hoodwink, and spirit of Shiva, in Jesus’ Name.”	1st degree	
<b>On each degree, from the 1<sup>st</sup> through 27<sup>th</sup>, repeat:</b> “I bind and break the power of the spirits of the _____ degree Mason and loose them from me and cast them far beneath me. I cancel the oaths and curses as if they had never been spoken. I loose from me all the collars and aprons and regalia, in Jesus’ Name.	2 <sup>nd</sup> degree	
	3 <sup>rd</sup> degree	
	4 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	5 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	6 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	7 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	8 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	9 <sup>th</sup> degree	

	10 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	11 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	12 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	13 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	14 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	15 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	16 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	17 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	18 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	19 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	20 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	21 <sup>st</sup> degree	
	22 <sup>nd</sup> degree	
	23 <sup>rd</sup> degree	
	24 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	25 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	26 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	27 <sup>th</sup> degree	
<b>On each degree, from the 28<sup>th</sup> through the 33<sup>rd</sup>, repeat:</b> “I bind and break the power of the spirit of witchcraft, and I bind and break the power of the spirits of the ____ degree mason and loose them from me and cast them far beneath me. I cancel the oaths and curses as if they had never been spoken. I loose from me all the collars, aprons and regalia in Jesus’ Name.”	<b>28<sup>th</sup> degree</b>	
	<b>29<sup>th</sup> degree</b>	
	<b>30<sup>th</sup> degree</b>	
	<b>31<sup>st</sup> degree</b>	
	<b>32<sup>nd</sup> degree</b>	
	<b>33<sup>rd</sup> degree</b>	

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

## 2. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
 all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
 all heads of python with all python eggs;  
 all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
 all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;  
 all heads of rejection;  
 all heads of fear;  
 all heads of perversion;  
 all heads of idolatry;  
 all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
 and,  
 all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.



## Chapter Five: Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy

### Testimonies

1. An ex-prostitute got saved in our ministry and asked for healing prayer. She explained to us that the medical profession had told her that she was dying. She experienced severe sexual abuse from early childhood. After being removed from her family home and placed in foster care, she was abused repeatedly. The abuse occurred in seven out of nine foster homes. At fourteen, she ran away and became a prostitute. She hated all men and cursed them. She judged men harshly and thought of her prostitution as using men to get what she needed. She used heroin, shared needles with other addicts, and contracted Hepatitis C.

When she arrived for ministry, she was in her mid-thirties, had two children, and needed a liver transplant to survive. During ministry, she developed trust in me, but at the same time, revealed her loathing of all men. She had never been taught about God's requirements to forgive, release, bless and stop judging others. As I ministered to her, I taught her about the spiritual consequences of her hatred and judgment of men. I reminded her all men are created in the image of God.

She forgave the men in her life and repented of the sin of judging all men. As the anointing of the truth in scripture was revealed to her, she fell under solid conviction, wept, and cried out to God as she experienced Godly sorrow. Her countenance softened, and her suspicious attitude vanished.

The presence of God was so strong we could not stand, but we continued to pray. After some ministry and the breaking of rights in her life, we anointed her with oil and prayed for her healing. She was miraculously healed, including her damaged liver. Medical tests verified her liver function was completely restored, and the Hepatitis C virus had vanished from her body. She was then able to go back home and be a mother to her children.

2. A Christian woman named Nancy presented herself for ministry. Broken-hearted and miserable, she had recently separated from her third husband, a violent alcoholic. Angry with herself, she makes the statement, "How did I get myself into this situation? I hate drunks. My father was a nasty drunk, and I swore never to marry anyone like him. But I have been married three times. Each time, I thought I was marrying a good man, but each husband turned out to be a nasty drunk.

So, what is the matter with me?"

Even the most uninformed, unsaved person feels the truth in the expression, "What goes around comes around." Man-created religions often articulate principles involving people bringing good or bad results based on their actions, including "Pay It Forward," Karma, Destiny, "the Fates," etc.

The Bible teaches us detailed truths regarding “sowing and reaping.” This particular spiritual law involves bitter root judgment and expectancy. As Christians, we can and should learn about spiritual laws by studying the Bible. Any instruction found in the Word of God is spiritual law, and we are to accept the Word as infallible.

### **The Bible is True Whether We Believe It Or Not**

The Bible reveals the spiritual laws that operate in the unseen realm. The spiritual reality described in the Bible is real and active, whether or not we believe it. We can denounce truth, but it is still true and alive. People may refuse to accept truth, but the truth of the Bible remains undiminished.

- **The Validity of God’s Word and Spiritual Laws**

The Word of God contains many spiritual laws. We obey these laws to flourish as children of God.

**2 Timothy 3:16-17 “All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.”**

**Hosea 14:9 “Who is wise? He will realize these things. Who is discerning? He will understand. The ways of the Lord are right; the righteous walk in them, but the rebellious stumble in them.”**

Spiritual laws always operate in the spiritual realm, as do physical laws in the physical world. For example, the law of gravity is true. Even if we do not believe in the law of gravity or understand precisely how it works, the force of gravity still operates.

### **The Law of Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy**

Bitter Root Judgment is the spiritual law that when you sow judgment toward another person, you will reap judgment against yourself.

Nancy is reaping what she has sown, although she does not yet understand this spiritual principle. When Nancy was a very young child, she suffered in many ways from the actions of her alcoholic father. She saw him at his worst. In her judgment, he cared more for the alcohol than he cared for her. In addition, she felt the misery and suffering of her mother, who was an enabler. The mother spent her energy making excuses for the father and cleaning up the messes. As a result, the young Nancy felt rejected and lonely as the classic alcoholic drama unfolded in her home.

Nancy grew resentful toward her father. In her heart, she judged her dad, considering him to be hateful, selfish, and embarrassing to the family. While her friend’s fathers were well dressed and courteous, her father was slovenly and smelly. She wanted to have someone else as her father. In all these ways, Nancy judged her dad.

As an adult Christian, Nancy forgave her father. She wanted to be forgiven, so she obeyed the Word to forgive her enemies. However, she never went beyond forgiveness to release and bless him.

Because Nancy never repented of the sin of judging her father, she continued to reap what she had sown. The spiritual law of bitter root judgment was still active and working against her.

She reaped the consequences of her sin against her father through her marriages to alcoholic husbands. What Nancy loathed and feared came upon her. What Nancy dreaded the most happened to her.

- **Do Not Judge One Another**

There are many scriptures in the Bible where God warns us not to judge one another.

**Matthew 7:1-2** “Do not judge, for you too will be judged. For in the same way you judge others, you will be judged, and with the measure you use, it will be measured to you.”

**Galatians 6:7** “Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows.”

As we study the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God, we learn some of His precepts and how He thinks. We need to realize and understand when we judge others and complain, His perception is that we are complaining to Him. Remember that His thoughts are above our thoughts and His ways are above our ways. We cannot question His motives or intentions. When we judge someone, we are complaining about His children, His creation, that only He can influence. He is the one who is faithful to complete the work that He has begun in us all. There are many scriptures that testify He hears our complaining.

**Numbers 14:26** “How long will this wicked community grumble against me? I have heard the complaints of these grumbling Israelites.”

**Exodus 16:8b** “You are not grumbling against us, but against the Lord.”

**Exodus 16:7b** “He has heard your grumbling against Him.”

As we ponder God’s precepts and consider His ways, we must realize that He is the ultimate and righteous judge. When judgement comes from us towards others, His perception is that we are claiming to be like God and are worthy to judge His creation. That is why the “fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.” Also, our requirement is to “trust in the Lord with all of our heart and lean not unto our own understanding.” We are not righteous judges and do not know what anyone needs. He perceives our thoughts from afar. He knows what we think, how we act, or if we bless or judge one another. This way, we are held accountable and receive refinement from Him due to our thoughts and actions.

**Psalms 139:1-4** “Oh Lord, you searched me and you know me. You know when I sit and when I rise; you perceive my thoughts from afar. You discern my going out and my

**lying down; you are familiar with all my ways. Before a word is on my tongue you know it completely, Oh Lord.”**

In this next scripture, the Word potsherd is used, which means broken pots. He is saying that we all are broken pots, and who are we to talk to Him or complain about the work of His own hands?

**Isaiah 45:9-12 “Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker, to him who is but a potsherd among the potsherds on the ground. Does the clay say to the potter, ‘What are you making?’ Does your work say, ‘He has no hands’? Woe to him who says to his father, ‘What have you begotten?’ or to his mother, ‘What have you brought to birth?’ This is what the Lord says — the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: Concerning things to come, do you question Me about my children, or give Me orders about the work of My hands? It is I who made the earth and created mankind upon it. My own hands stretched out the heavens; I marshaled their starry hosts.”**

Bitter root judgment causes us to compare others to ourselves or compare their actions to how we believe they should act. We feel entitled to judge others.

**II Corinthians 10:12 “We do not dare to classify or compare ourselves with some who commend themselves. When they measure themselves by themselves and compare themselves with themselves, they are not wise.”**

Though we are prone to judge others and feel entitled to do so, God has called us to a higher level and commands us to be a people of blessing. See **Matthew 5:43-45**.

I have noticed there is a misunderstanding or untaught area in some within the body of Christ. God’s intention for us is to stay so far away from judging one another that we do the opposite of what our natural desire would be. His will is for us to bless those that we would normally judge and pray for those that we would normally dislike. In doing this, we would put “heaping coals on their head.” It seems we would have a right to judge and dislike these people. They have persecuted and mistreated us in some way. God’s ways are different than our ways. His ways are higher than our ways. For favor from God in this area, we need to be obedient to His requirement. Many Christians believe this teaching means the Lord will convict those who have wronged us, assuming the “heaping coals on their head” would be a great burning conviction. In the context of this writing and the time period when it was written, fire was a necessary source of life. When anyone traveled for even a short amount of time, they would return home to find their fire was out with no remaining coals or embers. As a result, they designed a thick based bowl to carry burning coals from one house to another. This bowl would usually set on the wife’s head. She and her husband would travel to a neighbor’s house to ask for burning coals for their fire at home. The neighbor would scoop out coals from their own fire to place into this bowl for their friends. The wife would then put this bowl on her head and return home with her husband. This gave them the ability to cook, have light, and warmth. They were able to get what they needed to live. We do not know what anyone needs. It is not our place to speak out or think what someone else needs.

Remember when we speak out or think that we know what someone else needs, we are acting like we are God. We are acting like we are all knowing and righteous judges. We are NOT righteous judges, and when we speak out a judgement towards His creation, His perception is that we are questioning Him about the work of His own hands.

When we are obedient to these scriptures, we are trusting God for even our enemy's well-being. As we release all judgment and control in other people's lives, we are believing God will give them what they need. It is the same desire that we have for ourselves, that God will give us what we need as well. Our reward is great because God blesses those who bless. Scripture says that He also curses those who curse. If we want to be blessed, we stay away from judgement and accusation towards others. Take the thought captive, and stop! Seek renewal in this area. Do not align with the fruit of satan. He is the accuser of the brethren. **Revelation 12:10**

**Proverbs 25:21-22** "If your enemy is hungry, give him food to eat; if he is thirsty, give him water to drink. In doing this, you will heap burning coals on his head, and the Lord will reward you."

**Romans 12:19-21** "Do not take revenge, my friends, but leave room for God's wrath, for it is written: 'It is mine to avenge; I will repay,' says the Lord. On the contrary: 'If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him something to drink. In doing this, you will heap burning coals on his head.' Do not be overcome by evil, but overcome evil with good."

- **Discern Good and Evil; Do Not Judge Others**

The Bible teaches that as Christians we are instructed to discern good and evil in others without judging them. We are called to know one another by our fruit.

**Matthew 7:20**, "Thus, by their fruit you will recognize them."

**Hebrews 5:14**, "But solid food is for the mature, who by constant use have trained themselves to distinguish good from evil."

God forbids us to move past discernment and judge others. We must not judge but pray for God to bless the person and give them what they need.

- **Measuring Cup**

**Luke 6:37-38** "Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you."

To the level you sow judgment, you will reap consequences. The seed you sow causes you to reap a harvest. Sowing and reaping is the righteous decision of God. It is spiritual law that you will reap what you have sown. If you realize what you are reaping

is undesirable, please take the opportunity to sow something different. It is not wise to continue doing the same thing but expect different results.

The Word describes how this operates. The size “measuring cup” you use to pour out judgment against another person will be the same size “measuring cup” used to pour out upon you the consequences of your sin of judgment.

**I Corinthians 4:5 “Therefore judge nothing before the appointed time; wait until the Lord comes. He will bring to light what is hidden in darkness and will expose the motives of men’s hearts. At that time each will receive his praise from God.”**

### What is “Expectancy” and its Consequences?

Expectancy does not mean a person consciously “expects” harmful consequences following his judgment of others. People do not expect to suffer consequences for their refusal to forgive, release, and bless. However, as Biblical principles and spiritual law manifest in a person’s life, consequences are expected.

A person feels entitled to judge because, as a victim, something bad “happened to me.” The victim feels he has the right to protect himself by judging the wrongdoer. He stays away from this person and avoids others who behave like they do.

The individual believes he is empowered to protect himself through judging the other person. This is a deception. Judging others brings trouble, not protection. This mindset and device also creates a legal right to the enemy in our lives. This is due to the fact of us being disobedient to God’s ways and what is written that is spiritual law.

He believes he will avoid future hurt by judging and staying away from people who have hurt him. He will suffer harmful consequences because of his judging others.

A person judging another reproduces the original hurt into his life. The spiritual law of sowing and reaping brings continued harm and abuse. What you dread and loathe the most never seems to leave, and what you want to avoid comes back to you over and over again.

A person may feel he has the right to retain unforgiveness, anger, or hostility toward a person he has judged. This is a lie. The devil deceives us. Remember that satan is called “the accuser of the brethren.” This means that when we judge and accuse, we are aligning with the fruit of the enemy. Remember, satan is the one who wanted to set himself above God. Judgement of others is the same fruit for us.

The spiritual law of bitter root judgment and expectancy teaches us judging others is sin. There is an expectancy to reap consequences based on our actions due to judging others.

We are to follow the example of Jesus, who knowingly and willingly died on the Cross for all sinners without judgment.

Judgment is always based on a false belief of entitlement. A person wrongly feels entitled to judge someone else. Even if the person does not know about this spiritual law, it is still disobedience. God's law of sowing and reaping is always in operation. When it is written Scripture, it is spiritual law.

When Nancy received salvation as a younger person, she sincerely forgave her father and many other people. During deliverance ministry, Nancy was taught about the spiritual laws of Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy.

Nancy felt her forgiveness of her father should be sufficient. However, she still carried deep hurt and resentment toward him and did not want to release her father from the consequences of his actions. She felt entitled to remain offended. Nancy had forgiven her father, but she was unable or unwilling to release and bless him.

**Proverbs 18:21 "The tongue has the power of life and death, and those who love it will eat its fruit."**

We thoughtlessly judge others. We cannot know any other person's innermost being, history, generational tendencies, or torments. We carelessly predict failure, misery, and catastrophe. Our words spoken can injure others. God likens our words to deadly arrows.

**Examples of our careless judgments:**

"The apple does not fall far from the tree."

"Like father, like son."

"As the mother is, so shall the daughter be."

"That family is bad seed."

"Invite him to the party, and he will fall off the wagon."

**Jeremiah 9:7-9 "Therefore this is what the Lord Almighty says: 'See, I will refine and test them, for what else can I do because of the sin of my people? Their tongue is a deadly arrow; it speaks with deceit. With his mouth each speaks cordially to his neighbor, but in his heart he sets a trap for him. Should I not punish them for this?' declares the Lord. 'Should I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?'"**

**God Longs for us to Become His Obedient Servants**

God longs for us to become obedient to His ways. Become people of blessing. Freely forgive, release, and bless those around you. It is much easier to be obedient to this spiritual law than to deal with the consequences you reap from judgment.

In prayer, we should not pronounce what we believe other people need. For example, "Lord, my husband needs to treat me better," or, "Lord, convict my husband of his sin," or, "Lord, reveal her arrogance so she can repent" or, "Lord, she needs a deeper prayer life." These are judgments against another person. We cannot know what other

people need. We are not righteous judges. Only God knows what a person needs and when he needs it, but we often demand the Lord act based on our presumptions. Remember, God is faithful to complete the work He has begun. See **Philippians 1:6**. God is the faithful One, not us.

**I Samuel 15:22** “Does the Lord delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the Lord? To obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed is better than the fat of rams.”

The best prayer is to ask God to bless the individual and give him what he needs. In this way, we acknowledge God alone knows the innermost person and what he needs. In this prayer, we bless the person and thereby reap a blessing.

Jesus could have cursed and condemned to hell the people who mocked, tortured, and crucified Him. Instead, He chose to obey His Father’s will, even as the soldiers nailed Him to the Cross and the Jews jeered and spit on Him. Jesus blessed those who hurt Him and despitefully used Him. As the Pharisees dared Him to come down from the Cross and prove He was Messiah, Jesus asked His Father to forgive all of them.

Jesus refused to judge others. He endured all the torments of the Cross without sinning. He steadfastly remained the sinless sacrifice to take away the sin of the world. See **John 1:29**.

- **Jesus Refused to Judge Sinners**

**I Peter 2:21-23** “To this you were called, because Christ suffered for you, leaving you an example, that you should follow in His steps. ‘He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in His mouth.’ When they hurled their insults at Him, He did not retaliate; when He suffered, He made no threats. Instead, He entrusted Himself to Him who judges righteously.”

When Jesus suffered, He refused to judge the people who persecuted Him. He did not curse or retaliate against anyone. If Jesus had judged His persecutors, He would have sinned and thereby invalidated God’s entire plan of salvation for mankind.

Jesus demonstrated the ultimate example of blessing those who despitefully use us. As servants of Jesus Christ, our task is to bless those who persecute us.

**Matthew 5:43-45** “You have heard that it was said, ‘Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.’ But I tell you: love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes the sun to rise on the evil and the good and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous.”

**Romans 2:1** “You, therefore, have no excuse, you who pass judgment on someone else, for at whatever point you judge the other, you are condemning yourself, because you who pass judgment do the same things.”

**Deuteronomy 5:16** “Honor your father and your mother, as the Lord your God has commanded you, so that you may live long and that it may go well with you in the land the Lord your God is giving you.”

- **Christians Should Examine Their Own Lives**

As Christians, we have the responsibility to examine our own lives, but not the lives of others.

**Matthew 7:3-5** “Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your brother’s eye and pay no attention to the plank in your own eye? How can you say to your brother, “Let me take the speck out of your eye,” when all the time there is a plank in your own eye? You hypocrite, first take the plank out of your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother’s eye.”

Jesus reminds us at the last supper, having communion with the disciples, that we are to examine ourselves. **I Corinthians 11:28**

If we have difficulty understanding or accepting this Biblical principle, we should ask the Lord for wisdom.

**James 1:5** “If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him.”

### Consequences of Judging Others

Why do some areas in our lives not align with the promises of Abraham? For example, why do we live in financial lack when the Bible calls us the heirs to the promises of Abraham, including the ability to produce wealth? Many times, this is the consequence of having judged others. See **Deuteronomy 8:18**.

Nancy studied the Word of God and learned the principle of sowing and reaping. She realized she was reaping what she had sown when she considered her life and her marital history in particular. What she dreaded the most had come upon her. Nancy had judged her father, and she reaped the consequences of living with alcoholic husbands. This repeatedly happened, although Nancy had not intended or expected it to happen to her.

She recognized to be free from the consequences of this sowing and reaping, she must repent of the sin of judgment.

Nancy learned to forgive, release, and bless her father. By her actions and obedience, she stopped reaping the devastating consequences of her judgment.

- **Satan Sought to Set Himself Above God**

When you desire to elevate your judgment above God’s plans, you interfere with your relationship with Him. See **Isaiah 14:12-15**.

God loves all people. He has plans we cannot know for every person on earth. God warns that when we judge others, we assume His role as the righteous Judge. This displeases God and separates us from intimacy with Him. When we judge others, we disobey His Word. This disobedience, which is sin, separates us from the fullness of His presence and favor.

**Isaiah 55:8-9 “For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways. As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.”**

God blesses those who bless. God curses those who judge. See **Genesis 12:3**.

We open the door to reap what we have sown when we judge. If we are reaping bad things in our lives, we need to look back and repent of judgments that we have sown in the past.

In discerning bitter root judgment in our lives, we must look into the past. We must review what we have sown to understand what we are reaping now.

If you are not enjoying the covenant promises of Abraham, look back. Ask the Lord to show you what you have sown in the past.

- **Patterns of Sowing Judgment and Reaping Consequences**

There are tendencies and patterns of sin habits that demonstrate judgment has occurred. Some of these patterns include the following fruits of judgment:

Abusive father, abusive boyfriend, or husband  
 Alcoholic father, alcoholic boyfriend, or husband  
 Addicted parent, addicted spouse  
 Angry mother, angry girlfriend, or wife  
 Cold and distant parent, cold and distant spouse  
 Controlling mother, controlling girlfriend or wife  
 Critical parent, critical spouse  
 Poor providing father, poor providing husband  
 Promiscuous parent, promiscuous spouse  
 Obese mother, obese wife  
 Sickly mother, sickly wife  
 Smoking father, smoking husband  
 Workaholic father, workaholic husband

We usually judge our parents and reap from our spouses, but not always. We may have judged police, teachers, Sunday School teachers, Boy Scout Leaders, or other authority figures in childhood. As adults, we will reap through our bosses, co-workers, or others in authority over us in this situation.

Also, we may judge people who disagree with our theology or politics, people who have different religions or ethnic backgrounds, people who live together out of wedlock,

or have illegitimate children, live in alternative lifestyles, alcoholics, drug addicts, and other people who are different from us.

Usually, judgments formed in childhood were long ago, small, and forgotten. But if one is reaping consequences, there has been previous sowing of judgment. Ask the Lord to help you look back and show you how you sowed judgment earlier in your life.

**Hebrews 12:15 “See to it that no one misses the grace of God and that no bitter root grows up to cause trouble and defile many.”**

- **Judgments Defile Others**

If a spouse has dramatically changed since the marriage, they may have been defiled by the person’s judgment towards someone else. Spiritual law becomes active and the enemy has a legal right to become involved in the relationship. We reap what we sow. God allows satan’s involvement because we have been rebellious and disobedient to His requirements.

The law of sowing and reaping can overpower preferred behaviors in the spouse.

For example, an adult man sees his marriage failing in the same way his own father’s marriage failed. With God’s help, he can search for an actual event in which he cursed or judged his father and repent for that action. He may not remember specifics but can repent and ask the Lord to forgive him for judging his father. His acknowledgment of this sin and his repentance of it stops the action of the spiritual law. After that, he can expect a change in the “reaping” in his life.

For example, a girl heard her mother accuse her father of having an affair. True or not, the girl judged her father and formed a bitter root judgment against him. Without repentance, spiritual law says that she will reap in her marriage what she has sown toward her father. She creates a suspicion her husband is having an affair. Although he is not having an affair, she feels extreme jealousy and withdraws from him. Eventually, he does form an attachment to another woman. The husband has become defiled by the wife’s bitter root judgment toward her father.

Consider how many generations of people are defiled and made miserable by bitter root judgments. Note the judgment can be based on a lie from the enemy. The woman’s father may never have been unfaithful to her mother, but the spiritual law of sowing and reaping operates, nonetheless. A bitter root grew in her and defiled her, her husband, their children, and many others.

Judgment creates a right for the enemy to lie to us. When we judge, we open our minds to the lies of the enemy.

The Word requires us to take our thoughts captive.

**2 Corinthians 10:5 “We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”**

As we become the elect people of God and therefore not easily deceived, we can take our thoughts captive and remember God’s word. We are called to think and act differently from the world.

Nancy is now learning to walk free of judgment. She is becoming redeemed in this area. She is in a Bible-believing church, enjoying Christian fellowship. The Lord has given her a love and hunger for His Word, and she has joined a serious Bible study.

She is developing a disciplined prayer life. Nancy is building a healthy foundation for a joyful life as a servant of the Lord.

### **Procedure to Identify Bitter Root Judgment**

Ponder your life, present, and past. Then, ask the Lord to reveal instances of judgment.

Examine the fruit of your own life and your walk of faith. Where does your life fail to align with the promises of God? What unwanted pattern repeats itself in your life? If you discern areas with undesirable repeated patterns, this is evidence that you have judged in the past.

Repent and ask for forgiveness for the judgment, even if you do not remember judging. It is essential to forgive any offender, living or dead. Also, it is highly recommended to repent of the sin of assuming God’s position as a righteous judge. It is a form of idolatry with us raising ourselves above who we were created to be. Acknowledge Him as God and repent of the sin of judgement, accusation, and control of the situation. Take the thoughts captive, and remind yourself to wait on and trust in Him.

You should forgive and ask for forgiveness for the sin of judgment. Parents or others may be deceased or unapproachable, but repentance and forgiveness are necessary.

Further, repent for unconsciously influencing others due to our reaping from the sin of judgment.

Bless those who spitefully use you and persecute you. In the Name of Jesus, declare the bitter root of judgment to be dead.

Jesus paid the price of all your sins, including judging others. He purchased your freedom from the consequences of bitter root judgment, but you must obey His Word and claim the freedom He purchased for you.

- **Release From Bitter Root Judgment Is Not Automatic**

Acknowledgment and repentance of the specific sin, together with forgiveness, releasing, and blessing of the offender, will break the action of continuous reaping. Forgiving someone does not mean we approve of what they did. It means we are making the choice to be obedient to scripture. It also is a statement of action. It is our statement and fruit to God that we release all control of the situation. We release it to the One Who is the Righteous Judge and Who knows what we all need. He is the One Who is faithful to complete the work He has begun, not us. **Philippians 1:6**

As you sow the good seed of forgiveness, release, and blessings in due season, you will reap a bountiful harvest of the promises of God. We can discern if something is good or bad, right or wrong, and still not judge.



## Prayers

### 1. Prayer for Release of Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy

Dear Heavenly Father: In the Name of Jesus, I repent for the sin of judging Your creation. I have judged and condemned others, although I am not a righteous judge and have no right to judge anyone.

Jesus committed no sin, and was righteous, but He judged no one. Jesus entrusted Himself to You, the One who judges righteously.

I now entrust myself to You. Please forgive me for this sin of judging and condemning others. I now bless those who I have judged. I bless those I have accused. I bless those who hate me and have cursed or abused me. I break the power of the spiritual law of sowing and reaping.

I forgive, release, and bless them. I ask You to bless them and give them what they need. With this change in me comes a new expectation of reaping blessings, as opposed to reaping curses. When I “sow” differently, I will “reap” differently.

I now intend to sow blessings into my life by blessing those people who have despitely used me, in Jesus’s Name.

Thank You, Lord, for forgiving me and helping me to forgive others. I ask these things in the Name of Jesus Christ.

- **Scriptures**

**Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows. Gal. 6:7**

**Do not judge, or you too will be judged. For in the same way you judge others, you will be judged, and with the measure you use, it will be measured to you. Matt. 7:1-2**

**See to it that no one misses the grace of God and that no bitter root grows up to cause trouble and defile many. Heb. 12:15**

**Honor your father and your mother, as the Lord your God has commanded you, so that you may live long and that it may go well with you in the land the Lord your God is giving you. Deut. 5:16**

**Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive and you will be forgiven. Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you. Luke 6:37-38**

**You, therefore, have no excuse, you who pass judgment on someone else, for at whatever point you judge the other, you are condemning yourself, because you who pass judgment do the same things. Romans 2:1**

**This is what the Lord says-the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: Concerning things to come, do you question me about my children, or give me orders about the work of my hands? Isaiah 45:11**

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

## 2. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

- all attached heads of the spirit of satan;
- all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;
- all heads of python with all python eggs;
- all Indian heads of witchcraft;
- all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;
- all heads of rejection;
- all heads of fear;
- all heads of perversion;
- all heads of idolatry;
- all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs; and,
- all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## Chapter Six: Ungodly Beliefs and Thought Processes

### Testimony

A woman suffering from an incurable illness came for ministry. As a child, she had endured severe molestation. Male family members abused her so badly that she was removed from her home. Sent to various foster homes, she was molested by other men. Throughout the years, she retained the ungodly belief that all men were filthy, perverted, and unsafe. She even associated the Heavenly Father and Jesus as men and avoided seeking to know them. After she had exhausted all forms of medical procedures with no results, out of desperation she accepted Jesus as her Lord and Savior and came for healing. During ministry, she repented for her ungodly beliefs and judgment toward all men. She was totally healed from the incurable illness.

Jesus said satan has been a murderer from the beginning and is the father of lies. Satan is the enemy of our souls and lies to us. He can speak a lie into the mind of a person. For example, a young boy may come to believe that he is weak, worthless, or doomed to failure. When a family member mocks or criticizes him, the young boy remembers the lie. He accepts satan's lies as truth. Until he allows the Lord to redeem this area (lie), he will not be able to reach his full potential.

A young lady may become convinced she is not “fearfully and wonderfully made” (**Psalm 139:14**). She may have been told she is clumsy, ugly, overweight, or stupid. A family member may compare the girl to others and criticize her for failing to act like someone else. She believes the lie that she is insufficient and rejected.

### Thought Processes

An ungodly belief is a pattern of thoughts that contradicts God’s truths revealed in Scripture.

Such an ungodly belief will override the Word of God in the life of the person. This can happen whether or not the person intends this result.

Ungodly beliefs can be formed through childhood influences, traumatic events, or difficult life experiences. They can create spiritual strongholds that become the legal right to the enemy for torment and confusion. A person can blend improper beliefs with the truth of Scripture.

Often, an individual will form an ungodly belief when he sets his own opinion or ideas above the Word of God. His circumstances are believed to be

superior to Scripture, so he chooses to create a belief system based on personal experience. This system is his idea of how to get by with some scripture yet still protect himself due to previous situations. This occurs by blending in his own theology instead of being obedient to all aspects of the Word. It is a form of Godliness, but it is not fully trusting in Him. Proverbs says to “lean not unto your own understanding.” Our own understanding is usually based on hurts and difficult circumstances.

Even though we know scripture is spiritual law, our choice to create systems is often stronger than our desire for the truth of the Word. The person unknowingly follows this pattern as a form of self-protection or a desire to satisfy the flesh.

- **Ungodly Beliefs in Opposition to God**

To oppose the Word of God is to oppose Jesus Christ. Jesus is the Word of God.

**John 1:1 “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”**

**John 1:14 “The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.”**

Because Christ is the Word, when our thought processes conflict with scripture, they are anti-christ thoughts.

When the false belief is mixed into the person's belief system, it harms him. It becomes impossible for him to have the favor of God in the area of his ungodly belief. This does not mean he will lose all favor with God but loses favor in this area.

- **Oppose Ungodly Beliefs**

**2 Corinthians 10:5 “We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”**

- **Accountability to God**

God knows our thoughts and the intentions of our hearts. He knows all our deepest motivations.

The highest level of accountability is between the Lord and the individual. You cannot hide from God when He holds you accountable for your hidden sins. This is how the Lord is a righteous judge. He judges the "fruit" of our hearts, which are our secret thoughts. God is a God of our fruit and not our conversation. No matter how good our intentions are, we are held accountable for our thoughts and deeds.

**Psalm 139:2** "You know when I sit and when I rise; you perceive my thoughts from afar."

**Proverbs 5:21** "For a man's ways are in full view of the Lord, and he examines all his paths."

**Matthew 9:4** "Knowing their thoughts, Jesus said, 'Why do you entertain evil thoughts in your hearts?'"

**Matthew 12:25** "Jesus knew their thoughts and said to them, 'Every kingdom divided against itself will be ruined, and every city or household divided against itself will not stand.'"

**Luke 2:34-35a** "Then Simeon blessed them and said to Mary, his mother: 'This child is destined to cause the falling and rising of many in Israel, and to be a sign that will be spoken against, so that the thoughts of many hearts will be revealed.'"

**Hebrews 4:12-13** "For the word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account."

### Three human tendencies leading to ungodly beliefs

**Hosea 4:6** "...my people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. 'Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as My priest; Because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.'"

1. People who are destroyed for a lack of knowledge: The KJV uses the term "perish," which means to die. Many people never seek knowledge. They do not study the Word of God, so they are not equipped to examine themselves. Therefore, they cannot use the Word to judge their ungodly beliefs. They are left with their own opinions formed from their worldly experiences.

2. People who receive some knowledge: They have heard the Word but do not believe all of it. They pick and choose what they believe. They mix current cultural ideas with Scripture. They are superficially familiar with the Bible but do not apply all aspects of the Word to their lives. Some falsely believe that if they do not study the scripture, they will not be held accountable to what Scripture says.

**James 1:22 “Do not merely listen to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says.”**

For example, a person will go to church on Sunday but read their horoscope every day. Someone may call a psychic hotline for advice and counsel, rather than seeking solutions in Scripture. The following Scripture is what the Lord would say about that theology.

**Isaiah 8:19 “When men tell you to consult mediums and spiritists, who whisper and mutter, should not a people inquire of their God? Why consult the dead on behalf of the living?”**

3. People who reject the truth of Scripture: They may acquire knowledge of Scripture but reject the truth of the Word of God. These people refuse to believe and do not rely on the Bible as a source of truth for their lives. Such a person crafts a false belief system, then is trapped in it. He rebels against God. He becomes prey to pride, mind-control, flesh gratification, and the spirit of the antichrist. (See **John 1:14; Revelation 19:13**)

The above three examples are similar to Christ’s teaching on the Parable of the Sower. The Word of God is a seed. Where does the seed land? (See **Matthew 13:1-9, 18-23**) Do we allow our ungodly belief to contaminate the purity of the Word? Where is the line where we stop receiving the truth and start blending in our own beliefs? It depends upon our free will. In Paul’s letter to the Corinthians, he wrote **“For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness?”** (2 Corinthians 6:14b)

### Align Our Thoughts with the Word of God

**2 Corinthians 10:3-5 “For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”**

Consider the source of your thoughts. Where do your thoughts come from? Are they from the Bible or from your own experiences, circumstances, or the comments of others? Are your thoughts based on lies from satan or the truth from God? We have free will, and we can choose to align our thoughts with God’s Word or not. Remember the favor King David had on his life. God cherished David’s pursuit of Him in worship and study.

**Psalm 119:105 “Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet and a light unto my path.”**  
KJV

The Word of God defeats satan in every attack against us. When Jesus was tempted in the desert, He defeated satan by speaking the Word of God. (See **Matthew 4:1-11**)

Therefore, we are called to align our thoughts with what the Creator says about us. We must not underestimate the words of our Maker or dismiss and devalue the works of His hand.

**Isaiah 45:11-12** “This is what the Lord says - The Holy One of Israel, and its Maker; concerning things to come, ‘Do you question Me about My children, or give Me orders about the work of My hands? It is I who made the earth and created mankind upon it. My own hands stretched out the heavens; I marshaled their starry hosts.’”

God's favor becomes available to us as we obey His Word.

**I Samuel 15:22** “But Samuel replied: ‘Does the Lord delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the Lord? To obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed is better than the fat of rams.’”

This Scripture tells us that knowing the Word and following its pattern is better than always falling short and then repenting. This is a true definition of perishing for a lack of knowledge.

**James 1:22-25** This verse 22 tells us to not merely listen to the Word, and so deceive yourselves, but do what it says.

Jesus teaches that God wants to give us good gifts.

**Matthew 7:11** “If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

We, as the people of God, should seek favor from God according to His promises.

**Galatians 3:29** “If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.”

**Deuteronomy 29:5** “During the forty years that I led you through the desert, your clothes did not wear out, nor did the sandals on your feet.”

**Deuteronomy 5:29** “Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear me and keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!”

### **Seek God's Favor and Resist the Devil**

As we accept the Word of God as truth, we learn how to resist the devil so he will flee. This theology empowers us to become His elect, a people who are not

easily deceived. The Bible teaches us how to discern the lies of the enemy. Anything that does not align with the Word of God is a lie. It is anti-Christ because it is against the Word that is Christ.

**James 4:7 “Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.”**

### **Examples of Ungodly Beliefs**

#### **1. Ungodly Belief: Rejection**

Many people are in bondage to rejection because they hear lies about themselves and believe them. This could be their own thoughts or what someone else has spoken over them. Minimizing God’s Word and who He says we are, opens the door for the enemy to enter. This becomes a right to mental torment and produces more thoughts that do not align with the Word of God. As the enemy speaks lies to us, it multiplies and strengthens ungodly beliefs. Once we receive the lie of rejection, it causes us to be tormented with deeper levels of deception in this area.

God creates each of us individually. We all have a place in God’s plan on earth and are unique, according to His purpose. He has made us “fearfully and wonderfully.”

**Psalm 139:13-16: “For you created by inmost being; you knit me together in my mother’s womb. I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made; your works are wonderful, I know that full well. My frame was not hidden from you when I was made in the secret place. When I was woven together in the depths of the earth, your eyes saw my unformed body. All the days ordained for me were written in your book before one of them came to be.”**

No other place in scripture does it say He created anything “fearfully”—only mankind.

We must not compare ourselves to others who have been created for different purposes.

**2 Corinthians 10:12 “We do not dare to classify or compare ourselves with some who commend themselves. When they measure themselves by themselves and compare themselves with themselves, they are not wise.”**

We insult God by saying He should have made us differently. When we accept the ungodly belief of rejection, we are telling God we disapprove of how He made us. This area of ungodly beliefs requires recognition of this sin and repentance for the misalignment of our thoughts with God’s Word. We are telling Him in this ungodly belief that we disagree with how He created us. Afterwards renewal is required to stay away from this thought process.

## 2. Ungodly Belief: Prideful Mentality

Prideful mentality that proclaims, “What I own is mine,” without regard to God’s ownership of all creation. He believes he has produced wealth only through his own work and efforts.

**Psalm 50:10-12** “for every animal of the forest is mine, and the cattle on a thousand hills. I know every bird in the mountains, and the creatures of the field are mine. If I were hungry I would not tell you, for the world is mine, and all that is in it.”

**I Corinthians 10:26** “For, ‘The earth is the Lord’s, and everything in it.’”

**Deuteronomy 8:18** “But remember the Lord your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today.”

If we cling to ungodly beliefs, we are unable to appreciate God’s provision or honor Him for sustaining us. This means the proper godly response to receiving our provision of salary is to acknowledge Him as our provider, and thanking Him for it. He is our provider. We do not provide for ourselves. This theology of self-promotion, is an ungodly belief, and we need to take that thought captive and make it align with the Word.

It *is* God’s way that when we are obedient to His Word and are faithful with a little, He will entrust us with more. (See **Matthew 25:14-23**)

**Luke 16:10** “Whoever can be trusted with very little can also be trusted with much, and whoever is dishonest with very little will also be dishonest with much.”

**Luke 19:17** “‘Well done, my good servant!’ his master replied. ‘Because you have been trustworthy in a very small matter, take charge of ten cities.’”

## 3. Ungodly Belief: Blasphemous Mentality

**Blasphemous mentality:** misusing the name of the Lord, taking the Lord’s Name in vain, and speaking about the Lord carelessly.

God is Holy. One definition of “Holy” is dedicated or consecrated to God. Do not defile yourself with worldly thinking. Some believers feel it is humorous to use the term “Holy” and attach it to things that are not Holy: smoke, mackerel, cow, etc. These articles are not “Holy”.

The Lord’s Name is Holy. Things set aside for use by the Lord are Holy. Jesus taught, “Our Father, who are in heaven, Hallowed is Your Name...” When we say the word Holy, He turns His ear toward us, because Holy is one of His names.

When we respond to a situation and call out the name “Jesus!”, we are misusing His name if we are not calling on Him.

We should not mock the things of the Lord or desensitize ourselves to the ways of God. Society does not recognize God as holy, but we must.

**Isaiah 8:13** “The Lord Almighty is the one you are to regard as holy, he is the one you are to fear, he is the one you are to dread.”

**Exodus 20:7** “You shall not misuse the name of the Lord your God, for the Lord will not hold anyone guiltless who misuses his name.”

We will not receive the favor of the Lord when we profane His Name.

#### **4. Ungodly Belief: Trusting in Man More Than God**

How do we feel about the people who are in authority over us? For example, do we trust the government for our provision? In truth, the Lord is our Provider. He is our only source.

When we expect people to perform God’s functions in our lives (comfort, protection, counsel, provision, encouragement, etc.), we lose His favor in those areas. These people may be pastors, mentors, counselors, friends, family, teachers, police, elected officials, or governmental institutions. The heavenly Father sees we have turned our hearts away from Him when we trust in man to meet these needs. It is reasonable and considered godly to encourage and bless one another in these areas. The ungodly belief becomes relevant when we depend on others to supply these needs and rely on them for our strength. If we crave affirmation from one another, we are missing out on intimacy with and direction from God. He considers that we have gone astray in trusting others above Him.

Although these people and institutions can be used by God to bless us, we must trust Him. He is our ultimate source, provider, comforter, and we must draw our strength from Him.

**Jeremiah 17:5-8** “This is what the Lord says: ‘Cursed is the one who trusts in man, who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the dessert, in a salt land where no one lives. ‘But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit.’”

#### **5. Ungodly Belief: Astrology and Horoscopes**

Astrology claims to produce divine information about human affairs and terrestrial events by studying the movements and relative positions of celestial objects such as the sun, moon and stars.

A “horoscope” is supposed to forecast a person’s future based on the relative positions of stars and planets at the time of the person’s birth.

**Deuteronomy 4:19** “And when you look up to the sky and see the sun, the moon and the stars — all the heavenly array — do not be enticed into bowing down to them and worshiping things the Lord your God has apportioned to all the nations under heaven.”

**Jeremiah 8:2a** “They will be exposed to the sun and the moon and all the stars of the heavens, which they have loved and served and which they have followed and consulted and worshiped.”

## 6. Ungodly Belief: Superstitions and Wives’ Tales

Superstitions, including belief in the use of talismans, good luck charms, amulets, rabbit’s foot, or other items believed to cause “good luck”.

**I Timothy 4:7** “Have nothing to do with godless myths and old wives’ tales; rather, train yourself to be godly.”

Do not follow the ungodly belief that breaking a mirror creates seven years of bad luck, or walking under a ladder creates bad luck, or it is bad luck to spill salt, have a black cat cross your path, or other such old wives tales. This theology is a blending of ungodliness in our lives. We are called to trust Him totally, and not old stories of fortune and suspicion. Do not blend godliness with ungodliness. He is all sufficient, and this sin needs to be acknowledged and repented for.

The concept of “luck” is an ungodly belief. It is inconsistent with God’s nature as One who blesses His people. Why wish someone, “Good luck” when you can bless the person in the Name of the Lord? Luck is a derivative from the word lucifer. Wishing someone “Good luck” is a form of gambling because the enemy uses odds. Sometimes it is good, and sometimes it is bad. Biblical principles teach us to bless one another. Why not say, “May God keep you and bless you in all of your ways?”

## 7. Ungodly Belief: Disbelief of Tithing’s Promises

I cannot afford to tithe. I will always be in lack. Why do others seem to have more than me?

The principle of tithing (ten percent-see **Genesis 14:20**) involves God’s testing us with a simple command. Will we trust God and be obedient to His requirement? As the scripture testifies, the world is the Lord’s and everything in it. That means all wealth is already His. He wants to see if we will trust Him as our provider. He does not need our

money, yet he wants to prove to us that obedience in this area brings His full favor of provision.

If you do not tithe, giving God ten percent of your increase (income), you are rejecting God's specific promises in Malachi. **Malachi 3:11a (KJV)** states, **"And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes."**

**Malachi 3:8-12** "Will a man rob God? Yet you rob me. 'But you ask, "How do we rob you?" 'In tithes and offerings. You are under a curse — the whole nation of you — because you are robbing me. Bring the whole tithe into the storehouse, that there may be food in my house. Test me in this,' says the Lord Almighty, 'and see if I will not throw open the floodgates of heaven and pour out so much blessing that you will not have room enough for it. I will prevent pests from devouring your crops, and the vines in your fields will not cast their fruit,' says the Lord Almighty. 'Then all the nations will call you blessed, for yours will be a delightful land,' says the Lord Almighty."

**2 Corinthians 9:6-7** "Remember this: Whoever sows sparingly will also reap sparingly, and whoever sows generously will also reap generously. Each man should give what he has decided in his heart to give, not reluctantly or under compulsion, for God loves a cheerful giver."

**Nehemiah 9:21** "For forty years you sustained them in the dessert; they lacked nothing, their clothes did not wear out nor did their feet become swollen."

A person who walks in fear of lack has an ungodly belief. This questions and challenges the promise of God to take care of us and give us what we need. This can be empowered by a spirit of poverty. If we examine our lives and realize how good He has been to us, not lacking anything, we see that fear of lack is a lie from the enemy. Once we realize that we have followed this ungodly belief, we can easily repent. Then we can renew our mind and trust Him as our sole provider.

- **God Promises He Will Sustain Us**

**Isaiah 46:3-4** "Listen to me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the house of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and gray hairs I am he, I am he who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you."

**Psalm 81:16** "But you would be fed with the finest of wheat; with honey from the rock I would satisfy you."

## **8. Ungodly Belief: Fear and Anxiety**

Living with fear and anxiety is an ungodly belief system. Although we live in a culture rampant with anxiety, God calls us to trust Him in these areas of our life regardless of our circumstances. Our parents may not have practiced the principles of

trusting God. This does not give us the excuse to continue this lifestyle. If we are bound by fear and anxiety, we need to acknowledge it as sin, repent, and move forward in Christ. Scripture tells us 365 times and throughout, to not be afraid. I believe that this is for us to use once a day every day for each year. Do not fear, you are not alone. He will never leave or forsake you. **Hebrews 13:5**

**Luke 21:34-36** “Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life, and that day will close on you unexpectedly like a trap. For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth. Be always on the watch, and pray that you may be able to escape all that is about to happen, and that you may be able to stand before the Son of Man.”

**Philippians 4:6-7** “Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus.”

Anxiety is extremely destructive and steals our physical and mental health, and our well-being.

Anxiety manifests in the digestive system, among other places in the body. I have ministered to severely anxious and fearful people with irritable bowel syndrome, Crohn’s Disease, colitis, diverticulitis, and other digestive issues.

Worrying can become a habit and a familiar tendency. This makes it hard to notice how it is affecting you. Anxiety forces you to carry the burden of the outcome of each day. God perceives this anxiety as distrust in Him, and we lose favor in this area. While we are commanded to trust Him in all situations, we do not if we are anxious or afraid. We cannot rest “under the shadow of the Almighty” if we are walking in fear and anxiety. To be healthy and receive your healing, repent of the sin of believing the lie: “I can control the outcome of my life.” Seek renewal of the mind, denounce lies of fear and anxiety and move forward in Him.

**Proverbs 3:5-6** “Trust in the Lord with all your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight.”

If we submit to fear, we reject the word of the Lord that says fear not.

**Isaiah 41:10** “So do not fear, for I am with you; do not be dismayed, for I am your God. I will strengthen you and help you; I will uphold you with my righteous right hand.”

**Isaiah 54:17** “No weapon forged against you will prevail, and you will refute every tongue that accuses you. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and this is their vindication from Me”, declares the Lord.

If you walk in loneliness, you disregard God’s promise “I will never leave or forsake you.”

**Deuteronomy 31:6** “Be strong and courageous. Do not be afraid or terrified because of them, for the Lord your God goes with you; he will never leave you nor forsake you.”

**Joshua 1:5** “No one will be able to stand up against you all the days of your life. As I was with Moses, so I will be with you; I will never leave you nor forsake you.”

- **We Are Called to Face Even Death Without Fear**

**Hebrews 2:14-15** “Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death — that is, the devil — and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death.”

**2 Timothy 1:7 (NKJV)** “For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.”

## 9. Ungodly Belief: Thinking Too Highly of Oneself

**Romans 12:3** “For by the grace given me I say to every one of you: Do not think of yourself more highly than you ought, but rather think of yourself with sober judgment, in accordance with the measure of faith God has given you.”

Before a person is saved, he may think too highly of himself. The world encourages pride superior appearance, wealth, education, and accomplishments. It is dangerous to believe you are better than others because it is a false comparison.

**Isaiah 5:21** “Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes and clever in their own sight.”

Paul warns of the terrible, long-term effect of self-love and thinking too highly of oneself.

**2 Timothy 3:1-5** “But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boastful, proud, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God — having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them.”

This is the fate of those who exalt themselves and reject the refinement of the Lord. The deceived person comes to believe he deserves to be exalted. Jesus, our perfect example, humbled Himself and served others.

**James 4:10** “Humble yourselves before the Lord, and he will lift you up.”

**Philippians 2:3** “Do nothing out of selfish ambition or vain conceit, but in humility consider others better than yourselves.”

Another consequence of self-promotion is a tendency to criticize, belittle, mock, or scorn others. The Bible says you reap what you sow.

**Proverbs 18:21** “The tongue has the power of life and death, and those who love it will eat its fruit.”

**Galatians 6:7** “Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows.”

**James 3:16** “For where you have envy and selfish ambition, there you will find disorder in every evil practice.”

When we speak and judge others, we reap what we have sown. This occurs regardless of our belief or unbelief in this spiritual law. This principle is operational in our lives. (See Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy chapter)

**Proverbs 5:21** “For a man’s ways are in full view of the Lord, and he examines all his paths.”

**Jeremiah 16:17** “My eyes are on all their ways; they are not hidden from me, nor is their sin concealed from my eyes.”

**Jeremiah 17:10** “I the Lord search the heart and examine the mind, to reward a man according to his conduct, according to what his deeds deserve.”

## 10. Ungodly Belief: Man-made Religion

We live in a multicultural nation in which we are free to worship or refuse to worship any deity. However, this freedom comes from God. The gift of free will is to follow, seek, and worship Him or choose to reject Him. He is not looking for people that are forced to follow Him.

People are free to choose light or darkness. The only way to find the light is to accept Christ as your Lord and Savior, repent of all sin, and read and receive the Bible as the Word of God.

The first of the Ten Commandments says, “**You shall have no other gods before Me.**” **Exodus 20:2**

God forbids His people from worshiping other gods or blending doctrines from other religions. We must not choose doctrines or create theology that pleases us.

**Mark 7:6-8** “He replied, ‘Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you hypocrites; as it is written: “These people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.” You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men.’”

**Amos 5:21-24** “I hate, I despise your religious feasts; I cannot stand your assemblies. Even though you bring me burnt offerings and grain offerings, I will not accept them. Though you bring choice fellowship offerings, I will have no regard for them. Away with the noise of your songs! I will not listen to the music of your hearts. But let justice roll on like a river, righteousness like a never-failing stream!”

God was insistent to His people Israel about this area of sin. For anyone who has worshiped other gods or accepted other doctrines, see prayers below. This sin like all ungodly beliefs needs to be acknowledged and repented for. This opens our eyes to areas where the enemy has blinded us. **II Corinthians 4:4**

## 11. Ungodly Belief: Perversion

Perversion is a type of human behavior that deviates from Biblical principles and normal behaviors approved by God. It is often used to describe sexual behaviors that are abnormal, repulsive, obsessive, or addictive. In Scripture, perversion often refers to sexual behavior outside of the marriage of a man and woman.

Human beings pursue perversion, rejecting the Word of the Lord. For example, it is not okay to succumb to sexual behavior outside of marriage.

Ungodly beliefs include “God made me this way,” or “everybody does it” or “if it feels good, it is okay” or “I am not committing adultery because I am not married.” These ungodly beliefs empower sinful behavior. (See chapter on Soul Ties)

The Scriptures warn if we continue in the pursuit of perversion, God will allow the perversion to deepen. We become increasingly deceived. This downward spiral is described in **Romans 1:24-32**, with full-blown uncontrolled acts of the flesh described in **Galatians 5**.

**Romans 1:24-32** “Therefore God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to *sexual impurity* for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator — who is forever praised. Amen. Because of this, God gave them over to *shameful lusts*. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion. Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, He gave them over to a *depraved mind*, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless. Although they know God’s righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death,

they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them.”

Galatians 5:19-21 “The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.”

I Corinthians 6:9-10 “Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homosexual offenders nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God.”

I Corinthians 6:18-20 “Flee from sexual immorality. All other sins a man commits are outside his body, but he who sins sexually, sins against his own body. Do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit, who is in you, whom you have received from God? You are not your own; you were bought at a price. Therefore honor God with your body.”

These New Testament Scriptures are powerful and often well-known. However, many people are not set free by knowledge alone. They must have deeper redemption, with repentance and the breaking of soul ties and generational curses.

After asking for forgiveness for perversion, it is important to repent more deeply. We must repent for the sin of the pursuit of perversion. We must repent of the sin of the idolatry attached to the pursuit of perversion. It is a sin to use perversion as a source of comfort because we are refusing the comfort of God. When we refuse God’s comfort and choose perversion, we must ask forgiveness for the sin of this pursuit. Repentance breaks the right to the spirit of perversion and makes it easier to overcome and prevent relapse into old habits.

**Jeremiah 2:20-25** describes how God perceives our pursuit of perversion. God’s way is that when we pursue perversion, He hears us say to Him, **“I will not serve You!”** He interprets our actions as declaring to God’s face, **“It is no use. I love foreign gods, and I must go after them.”** This is identical to the pursuit by the people of Israel of the foreign god baal, which included sexual intercourse with shrine prostitutes, orgies, and homosexuality. We must always repent for sin as God defines it.

It is an ungodly belief that we can pursue perversion without terrible consequences. When perversion is acted upon, the consequences of soul ties, generational curses, demonic oppression, sickness, disease, and other repercussions come with the “two becoming one”. See **Genesis 2:24, Ephesians 6:31, I Corinthians 6:16**.

We become liable for the soul ties, generational curses, and other problems of the sexual partner as much as we become open to sexually transmitted diseases.

When we cross the boundaries of spiritual law, we can expect to receive consequences and repercussions from the pursuit of perversion. This is God's refinement of us to bring us to the acknowledgment of sin and repentance.

## 12. Ungodly Belief: Abortion

**Proverbs 6:16-19** "There are six things the Lord hates, seven that are detestable to him: haughty eyes, a lying tongue, *hands that shed innocent blood*, a heart that devises wicked schemes, feet that are quick to rush into evil, a false witness who pours out lies and a man who stirs up dissension among brothers."

**Proverbs 31:8a** "Speak up for those who cannot speak for themselves."

There is often an ungodly belief attached to the controversial issue of abortion. Many believe that until a child is born it is not a human being. There is Biblical reference in the next Scripture that teaches us our Heavenly Father has "upheld us since we were conceived."

**Isaiah 46:3-4** "Listen to me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the house of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and gray hairs I am he, I am he who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you."

This book is not a writing on the debate of the worldly perspective of the pros and cons of abortion. There are individual opinions and theologies attached to difficult situations such as rape, incest, and the health of the mother. This teaching is a Biblical view of how *God* feels about taking life and shedding innocent blood. There are many scriptural examples of offenses to God relating to people sacrificing their children to foreign Gods. People would offer their children as a sacrifice to appease a god that did not exist. There are also many historical examples of this practice. In Hawaii, parents would throw their children into a volcano to appease the gods of fire. This was in the hope that the god of fire would be satisfied and not engulf the entire community with lava and fire.

**Leviticus 18:21** "Do not give any of your children to be sacrificed to Molech, for you must not profane the name of your God. I am the Lord. (pass your children through the fire)

As believers, we know that satan was a murderer from the beginning (See **John 8:44**). We should realize he desires to destroy mankind. He continues to find ways for children to be murdered and sacrificed. In modern society, we are not sacrificing to an unknown god. It is instead sacrificing them to our own desires, convenience, selfish motives, fears, and a lack of trust in God. In some situations, children are aborted for the sin of perversion and as a form of birth control. In turn, this means we are sacrificing them to ourselves. This is an ungodly belief and a form of idolatry that needs to be recognized, revealed, repented for, and released to God. He is merciful to the sinner who truly repents and "He is faithful and just to forgive and cleanse us from *all*

unrighteousness.” (See **I John 1:9**) God is a loving, forgiving Lord who will forgive the mother and father and heal their hearts.

For the unknowing and unrepentant parents, there are scriptures that explains God’s heart for the sin of abortion.

**Ezekiel 16:36** “This is what the Sovereign Lord says: Because you poured out your wealth and exposed your nakedness in your promiscuity with your lovers, and because of all your detestable idols, and because you gave them your children’s blood,”

**Ezekiel 16:38** “I will sentence you to the punishment of women who commit adultery and who shed blood; I will bring upon you the blood vengeance of my wrath and jealous anger.”

God instructed the people of Israel not to intermarry with foreign people groups who worshipped other gods.

**Deuteronomy 7:3-6** “Do not intermarry with them. Do not give your daughters to their sons or take their daughters for your sons, for they will turn your sons away from following me to serve other gods, and the Lord’s anger will burn against you and will quickly destroy you. This is what you are to do to them: Break down their altars, smash their sacred stones, cut down their Asherah poles, and burn their idols in the fire. For you are a people holy to the Lord your God. The Lord your God has chosen you out of all the peoples on the face of the earth to be his people, his treasured possession.”

Although God promises to sustain us, there is an ungodly belief attached to the mindset that we will not be able to afford to raise a child. There is also an ungodly belief attached to the thought process that the timing is not right. “It will be better to have a child later in life.” Some believe that if their partner is not willing to share the responsibility of raising the child, they could never do it on their own. There are many other reasons why people convince themselves it is appropriate to abort a child: the health of the mother, rape or incest, overpopulation, raising a child in modern day violent society, etc.

These ungodly beliefs ignore God’s principles, His love, and sovereign power to care for every child. Who are we to say it is not a good or convenient time to bring forth a child into the world? God will sustain the baby as He has sustained us all.

**Refinement from the Lord is God's way of pulling us out of ungodly beliefs.**

When our thought processes in a specific area of belief do not line up with the Word of God, God sends His Refiner's fire. He is relentless in refining us and drawing us back unto Himself. (See Chapter 9 Refinement and Renewal of the Mind)

**Hebrews 12:5-11 (esp. 10-11)** “Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in His

**holiness. No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.”**

The refinement process is accomplished when we concentrate on aligning our thoughts to the Word of God. (See **2 Corinthians 10:5**) God knows our thoughts and the intentions behind them.

Ungodly beliefs open doors to the enemy to create strongholds and legal rights in a person's life. These ungodly beliefs may include fear of lack, other ungodly fears, superstitions, prejudices, extra-Biblical religious practices, or theology that does not agree with Scripture.

As we reject ungodly beliefs and embrace Scriptural truths and Spiritual law, we enter into God's favor. This causes His promise of abundant life, health, prosperity, and the covenant promises of Abraham, which is our spiritual inheritance.

When we accept the Word of God and renounce ungodly beliefs, we can receive our renewal and move past refinement regarding that specific ungodly belief.

**Jeremiah 9:7 “Therefore this what the Lord Almighty says: ‘See, I will refine them and test them, For what else can I do because of the sin of My people?’”**

**Jeremiah 15:19a “Therefore this is what the Lord says: ‘If you repent, I will restore you that you may serve me; if you utter worthy, not worthless, words, you will be my spokesman.’”**

God will lift the refinement as we repent and overcome ungodly beliefs. Our Heavenly Father will resume the refinement if we return to an ungodly belief.

God knows we are prone to return to ungodly beliefs and behavior.

**Proverbs 26:11 “As a dog returns to its vomit, so a fool repeats his folly.”**

### **Consequences of Unbelief**

We cannot enter into God's rest if we harbor unbelief.

**Hebrews 3:7-12, 18-19 “So, as the Holy Spirit says: ‘Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your heart as you did in the rebellion, during the time of testing in the desert, where your fathers tested and tried me and for forty years saw what I did. That is why I was angry with that generation, and I said, ‘Their hearts are always going astray, and they have not known my ways.’ So I declared on oath in my anger, ‘They shall never enter my rest.’ See to it, brothers, that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. And to whom**

**did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.”**

When a person cannot sleep or needs medication to sleep, there are areas of unbelief in the person's life. If a person comes for ministry and cannot sleep except with sleeping pills, this is an important area to explore.

For example, a woman came for ministry because she could not sleep. The ungodly belief revealed during ministry was she could not believe God would complete the work in her husband to make him into a man she would admire and honor. When this ungodly belief was revealed, she repented. Soon, she began to love and honor her husband and no longer required medication to sleep.

### **Maintain Freedom from Ungodly Beliefs**

Identify and repent of ungodly beliefs as God reveals them to you.

Some ungodly beliefs will be evident because they are clearly against the Word. Other ungodly beliefs are hidden and more deceptive. At first, we may not recognize the subtle lie. However, as we study the Word, the Lord will reveal the hidden ungodly beliefs.

Read and study the Bible. Spend time in the Scriptures. Be cleansed by the reading of the Word and the washing and renewal of your mind.

As you study the Bible, you will more clearly hear the Holy Spirit speak to your mind.

**John 14:26 “But the Counselor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you.”**

The Word gives us direction in areas we do not understand.

**James 1:5 "If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him."**

For example, I got out of the shower one morning and was about to shave. I looked in the mirror and saw how much I looked like my father. My beard was coming out with more gray. New wrinkles had appeared around my eyes and mouth. I thought to myself, “I am getting old.” Immediately, the Lord spoke to me, **“2 Corinthians 4:16.”**

I did not immediately know what that Scripture was. I could have ignored it, assuming it was “just me.” But I heard it. I opened my Bible and read God’s Word to me:

**2 Corinthians 4:16** “Therefore we do not lose heart. Though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day.”

I laughed out loud. God was agreeing that I was "outwardly wasting away"! God enjoyed playing with me while letting me know He loves me. God knows the thoughts of our hearts. I enjoyed that moment of fellowship with my heavenly Father. He let me know He enjoyed being with me.

Once sin is revealed, we must not continue to practice that sin. We must repent and stop.

**Hebrews 10:26** “If we deliberately keep on sinning after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sins is left, but only a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies of God.”

Remember that if we refuse to repent and turn away from ungodly beliefs, God will allow our thinking to darken and our hearts to harden. Our sins become progressively more detestable, and we can no longer detect God's eternal power and divine nature.

**Romans 1:18-21** “The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness, since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities -- his eternal power and divine nature -- have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened.”

**Psalms 81:12** “So I gave them over to their stubborn hearts, to follow their own devices.”

If this chapter has ministered to you in the area of ungodly beliefs, repentance for sin is necessary. This is based on the Biblical principle in **James 5:16b**, which says “**The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.**” Our only righteousness comes through repentance of sin. After this process, please follow through with the remaining prayers of this chapter.

## Prayers

### 1. Prayer to Release and Remove Ungodly Thought Processes, Mindsets, Devices, Defense Mechanisms, and Wrong or Unbiblical Reactions

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_ ask You to forgive me for the sin of failing to cast my cares upon You because I did not know how to cast my cares upon You. There have been times in my life when I suffered from a lack of knowledge of knowing how to handle life's situations, difficulties, decisions, traumas, and not casting my cares upon Jesus as Your Word says to do. I confess I have used ungodly thought processes, mindsets, devices, defense mechanisms, and wrong or unbiblical reactions. I confess that I sought to handle and control my own problems in my own ways. I devised methods and systems for my self-preservation. Now, I choose to ask You, Lord, to gather and remove the devices I have created and used to get through life's difficult circumstances. I repent for the control I used in creating these devices instead of trusting in You. I release all control, anger, revenge, unforgiveness, and judgments, and all altered states of mind into which I entered to handle trauma in my life. I relinquish my self-preservation, and I trust You for my life and choices.

I release to You all trauma, known and unknown. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondage, enslaving thought patterns, and dependencies in the name of Jesus Christ. I now purpose in my heart not to reenter these altered states of mind, devices, and mindsets that I have become accustomed to using.

I pray in the name of Jesus that You give me the renewal of mind to recognize these devices when they reappear due to life's circumstances. I release to You all disappointment, bitterness, and resentment about my past. I choose to renew my mind through the ongoing study of Your Word. I choose Your truth instead of altered states of mind that have caused me to revisit painful feelings or paralyze and distort my response to abuse or other behavior patterns toward me.

So, I speak to all altered states of mind, ungodly thought processes, mindsets, defense mechanisms, devices, and conditioned reactions. I command all such devices to align themselves with the Word of God and release their power over me, my mind, my emotions, my personality, and align with my will in the name of Jesus Christ. I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deut. 28:13**) to have Jesus Christ and Your Holy Spirit come into me and restore my soul. I forgive, release, and bless everyone who has hurt, abused, or misled me. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people. I ask You to bless them and give them what they need. Please bring me into a place where I am fully restored and made whole in spirit, soul, and body. I ask You to renew my mind so that I will not return to these old ways of thinking.

I thank You for teaching me to take captive every thought to make it obedient to Jesus Christ (**2 Corinthians 10:5**). I ask You to give me the renewed ability to maintain this fresh way of thinking for my new godly lifestyle.

According to James 1, I can ask You, Lord, for wisdom, and You will give generously to all without finding fault. I ask that You give me the wisdom to maintain godly thought processes in this new season of my life and not return to the old, ungodly thought processes.

I desire that all of me be able to worship You in spirit and truth (**John 4:23-24**). I desire to worship You with a sound mind, undivided heart, and clarity. I thank You and ask these things in the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## **2. Prayer of Repentance for Prior Involvement in any Other Religion or Spiritual Practice or Teaching**

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I come before You. I praise You for making a way for the forgiveness of my sins. I acknowledge that Your Word requires that I repent and ask forgiveness for my sins, in Jesus' Name.

I acknowledge Jesus Christ is the Lamb of God, slain for the remission of my sins and the sins of the world. I acknowledge Jesus Christ is the Son of the Living God. I believe He was born of a virgin, lived a sinless life, suffered and died on the cross, was buried, and rose again. He ascended into heaven, where He sits by His Father.

Under my Blood Covenant of Salvation, through the acceptance of Jesus Christ as my Lord and Savior, I repent of the sin of believing any teaching that does not line up with the Holy Bible, the Word of God.

The Scriptures say Jesus Christ became the Word of God (**John 1:14; Revelation 19:13**). Therefore, I repent of believing anti-christ teachings and entertaining anti-christ and unbiblical thoughts.

With the authority I have in my Blood Covenant of Salvation with Jesus Christ, I break the power of all spoken or written oaths, curses, vows, decrees, chants, blood sacrifices, and rituals.

I repent of the sin of receiving or aligning with these anti-christ oaths, curses, vows, or decrees. I repent of the sin of participating in any anti-christ chants, blood sacrifices, or rituals of any description.

I repent of the sin of receiving any anti-christ attachments to my mind, intellect, heart, feelings, and emotions.

I repent of the sin of receiving and agreeing with unbiblical principles, teachings, and spiritual deceptions. I acknowledge these have caused attacks on

my physical body, mental wellbeing, relationships, and finances. I bind and break the power of all of these ungodly attachments in the mighty Name of Jesus.

The Word tells me I am to forgive and bless those who persecute or spitefully use me, as Jesus forgave and blessed. (**I Peter 2:21-23; Matthew 5:44**). I repent of the sins of anger, unforgiveness, and judgment toward anyone who has misled or misguided me in any way, in the Name and Blood of Jesus Christ. I pray that you bless them and open their eyes to your truth. Thank You, Heavenly Father, that through my acceptance of Jesus Christ as my Lord and Savior, and my acknowledgement that He is the only Way to You, I become an heir to the promises of Abraham (**Galatians 3:29**).

I stand in faith and believe that all Your promises are Yes and Amen, through Jesus Christ (**II Corinthians 1:20**). Amen.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

### 3. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
 all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
 all heads of python with all python eggs;  
 all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
 all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;  
 all heads of rejection;  
 all heads of fear;  
 all heads of perversion;  
 all heads of idolatry;  
 all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
 and,  
 all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## Chapter Seven: Personal Sin

### Deliverance from Personal Sin: Bob Lucy's Testimony

The men in my family always smoked. Most all the men I knew used some form of tobacco. As a child, I watched the men of my church gather outside to smoke and socialize after the Sunday service. I remember them telling stories, holding their cigarettes, and exhaling smoke as they laughed with one another. I wanted to be a part of that fellowship. I yearned to be old enough to smoke and buy my own cigarettes.

My father, grandfather, great grandfather, as well as my uncle, my brother, and all my cousins smoked. My grandfather worked for a tobacco company and received free cigarettes, which he shared with my father. All men in my immediate and extended family were addicted to nicotine. As a child, I watched the smokers and felt enticed to join in. My brother and I began to steal my father's cigarettes or his used cigarette butts and sneak into the woods to smoke. I started smoking at age nine. By the time I was twelve years old, I was addicted. When my father caught me smoking, he punished me severely because he did not want me to smoke and carry the addiction that bound him. I remember one time he was spanking me for smoking, but he was smoking himself while he spanked me. Being a prior smoker who was bound by addiction, I now realize that my father was not being a hypocrite. When smoking is your source of comfort, you turn to it when you must deal with any form of nervousness, stress, or disagreement.

From age twelve, many activities were sacrificed in order to smoke. Putting smoking first in my life caused me to stop playing football because I preferred to earn money to give me the ability to buy my own cigarettes. During my teenage years, I would hide cigarettes and lie in order to escape into the woods to smoke.

Coming into legal age, I smoked everywhere without restraint: my home and around my family. Everything I owned smelled of smoke. I sang in a band and smoked during concerts. I felt invincible, and the perils of smoking never crossed my mind. Thinking that none of the horror stories I heard about smoking would ever happen to me. I felt strong, worked hard, and saw no reason to stop. I did not realize how deeply rooted the addiction had become.

Beginning to minister in my early thirties, I hid smoking but would not give it up. In order to conceal the addiction, I would always carry breath mints and gum to hide the smell. There were many times when I tried to quit but fell prey to the addiction again and again. You feel as though others cannot sense what is going on, but in fact, they all know. This is part of the deception of being an addict.

In my forties, the tobacco was taking its toll on my body. My breathing became more labored and my heart rate increased.

I refused to give this sinful addiction to the Lord. It was my personal sin and my choice. It was a source of comfort for me, a true idol. My flesh and free will were in charge of this area of my life.

When deciding to quit, the night before I would smoke an entire pack of cigarettes. The plan was to purchase nicotine gum, transdermal nicotine patches, cans of dry snuff, and an unopened pack of cigarettes in case of an emergency. I had become guilty of refusing to seek the Lord first and trust in Him. Only after all these steps did I pray to the Lord to deliver me. In my prayer, I would ask Him to forgive me for the sin of smoking.

I repeated this cycle many times, always returning to smoking. Often blaming others for triggering me to smoke again, my pattern was to say, "It is that person's fault." I never took responsibility for the severity and depth of my own addiction.

I hated my weakness and would repent and try my best to trust the Lord in this problem area of my life.

Finally, in early 2016, I was lying in bed trying to rest. Laying my head upon my arm, I heard my heart thumping so hard that I could not sleep. Suddenly, I realized why all the men in my family had died from heart issues.

The Second Commandment tells us not to create an idol in the form of anything (**Deuteronomy 5:8**). I had created an idol, and the idol to which I gave my time, attention, and money was a cigarette. I used this addiction as a source of comfort, instead of turning to Him. When things went wrong or not as planned, I would go outside, smoke, and then think of lifting the situation up to God.

As God began to reveal my personal sin to me, I cried out to Him. I repented of the personal sin of smoking, and I repented of the sin of the idolatry attached to using smoking as a source rather than Him. Knowing that one of the names of the Holy Spirit is the Comforter, I had used tobacco as a pacifier and a source of comfort rather than God.

As I repented and confessed my own sin, the Lord helped deliver me. He granted me His favor in this final effort to quit smoking. I did not buy any nicotine products or have any backup plan apart from the Lord. After repenting of the idolatry attached to smoking, I prayed that the Lord would heal and deliver me.

I was surprised and blessed by the ease the Lord gave me. He completely delivered me from this addiction. I have never smoked or used any tobacco products since I quit on March 14, 2016.

I repented to my family, including my grandchildren, of smoking in front of them and enticing them. I also told them that smoking was one of the biggest and

most costly mistakes of my life, and I was trusting God that this sin of addiction would stop with me.

Now, I am healthy. My heart rate and blood pressure are normal again.

I regained my strength. I work longer, preach harder, and sing louder. My stamina has returned. I no longer feel ashamed of hiding my personal sin while helping others to get free.

As I have continued to cry out to God, He has revealed other strongholds in my life. When I said “No” to smoking, my flesh was weakened. As God revealed other personal sins, He has redeemed these areas and released me from further bondage.

- **Revealed, Redeemed, Released**

When I said “No” to smoking, the Lord REVEALED other areas of bondage. Addictions run in groups. It is never just the obvious addiction. It is about the flesh wanting to be fed, feel good, and be in charge. The flesh and the Spirit war against one another.

**Galatians 5:17 “For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want.”**

These revealed areas became REDEEMED when I repented. This means that when we repent, the blood of Jesus cleanses this area of sin. (See **I John 1:9**)

In each redeemed area, the Lord has RELEASED me from bondage.

**Isaiah 61:1b “He has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim freedom to the captives and release from darkness for the prisoners.”**

Please note, this chapter will not describe and define all forms of personal sin. As always, we are called to learn the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God by studying scripture. This chapter is instead an overview of various areas of biblical counsel and direction for our lives.

## **King David's Story**

David became the Biblical standard by which the kings of Judah and Israel were measured. Generation after generation of kings were measured by David’s performance and heart for God. They were all held accountable and compared to the standard of their father, David. In the years of King David’s reign, he asked God to show him His ways. In the midst of sin and troubled times, God restored the repentant sinner and used him mightily as king of His people.

David, shepherd boy, musician, poet, warrior, greatest king of Israel, a man after God's own heart, was a peeping tom, an adulterer, and a murderer. He was a sinner who lied about his sins, hid them, and did not confess until confronted (**2 Samuel 11 and 12**).

In the spring, when King David was due to lead his army into battle, he loitered in Jerusalem in his comfortable palace among his wives and concubines. David rose from his bed at night, and from the flat roof of his palace, he secretly watched a beautiful woman. Bathsheba thought she was bathing in private while her husband was away at war and the city was at rest. She could only obey when she received a command to visit the king's palace. She conceived a child and was at the mercy of King David as well as her husband. When David could not manipulate her husband into sleeping with her to hide David's sin, the king had her husband killed. The king sent Bathsheba's husband into a battle position, and all knew he would not be able to return home to his wife.

When the prophet Nathan confronted the King about his personal sin, David immediately repented. He confessed his wrongdoing, honestly admitted all his sin before God, and began his restoration. His relationship with the Lord began to be restored. David suffered immediate and long-term consequences because of his wrongdoing. The baby born to Bathsheba died. David comforted his wife after their first baby died. Bathsheba conceived another son, Solomon, who eventually became the next king of Israel. David resumed his faithful worship of the Lord. The Bible records David to be a man after God's own heart (**I Samuel 13:13**).

This man was known as a worshipper of God. He longed to know God more.

**Psalm 25:4-5** “Show me your ways, O Lord, teach me your paths; guide me in your truth and teach me, for you are God my Savior, and my hope is in you all day long.”

But David's life reveals the human tendency to personal sin. In **Psalm 51:10-12**, David describes the misery of his sin and his desperate cry for forgiveness, cleansing, and restoration. David cried out to God saying, “Create in me a clean heart, and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me.” This is a wonderful example of repentance and desperation to remain in the presence of God. (please read full chapter of **Psalm 51**)

### **Sinful Nature of Human Beings**

**Romans 11:32** “For God has bound all men over to disobedience so that he may have mercy on them all.”

**Romans 8:20-21** “For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the One Who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God.”

These two Scriptures teach us that God has created mankind to have to deal with sin and frustration. If we were able to be sinless on our own, it would make us like Jesus. It would invalidate God's plan for salvation because some would be able to be sinless. Everything reacts according to how it was created. He has created us to need Him, to redeem these areas, and give us the abilities to overcome sin and frustration. There must be a clear distinction between mankind and the Savior of the world.

**James 1:13-14** “When tempted, no one should say, ‘God is tempting me.’ For God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does he tempt anyone; but each one is tempted when, by his own evil desire, he is dragged away and enticed.”

It is the nature of all human beings to sin. Our thoughts and interests revolve around ourselves. From the beginning of history, human beings have displayed this vulnerability to sin.

**Romans 3:23** “for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.”

As King David recognized, we all have sinful natures.

**Psalm 51:5** "Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me."

God placed Adam and Eve in a perfect paradise and gave them only one prohibition. Both broke the rule. They ate the fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil when they were forbidden to do so (**Genesis 3**).

God warned Cain, the firstborn son of Adam and Eve, “**If you do what is right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.**” (**Genesis 4:7**). Cain chose to do what was wrong and murdered his brother.

People lived long lives at that time. By the time of Noah, who was the tenth generation after Adam, God was grieved that He had created mankind.

**Genesis 6:5-6** "The LORD saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time. The Lord was grieved that he had made man on the earth, and his heart was filled with pain."

If we don’t notice sin, and allow God to redeem us, our thoughts can become evil as well. We become consumed with ourselves which is a form of iniquity to a Holy God. We must overcome self-consumption which is how we are born. His goal is to teach us how not to be self-consumed, but to learn how to bless others.

- **Sin Distorts Our View of God**

We can often have distorted perceptions of God, the Father. We grow up with authority figures, including our parents, other family members, teachers, ministers, and influencers. These provide our first subconscious images of God. Because these are fallen human beings, they present distorted, imperfect images of our heavenly Father, the righteous Judge. Under normal circumstances, parents provide children with food, shelter, protection, clothing, and the comforts of life. Children grow up believing their parents or other authority figures are the source of everything.

Based on these early experiences, children often grow up subconsciously believing distortions about God, their true Provider. Doctrines that do not align with the Word of God, such as fear and unbelief, can further distort the truth about our heavenly Father.

**Isaiah 46:3-4** “Listen to me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the house of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and gray hairs I am he, I am he who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you.”

Our distortions of the nature of God can affect adult responses to the heavenly Father. These are subtle mindsets due to our own circumstances and experiences. The true heart of the Father is spoken in Scripture.

**Deuteronomy 5:29** “Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear Me and keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!”

This Scripture uses the reference, “keep all my commands always” which means we are called to follow His ways and requirements.

The Bible teaches none of us can claim to be without sin.

**I John 1:8** “If we claim to be without sin, we deceive ourselves and the truth is not in us.”

Sin interferes with our ability to trust in and wait upon the Lord. Our flesh, or carnal nature, demands to be satisfied. We do not want to depend on God’s promises, so we strive to meet our own needs for provision, recognition, validation, security, and other expectations. We refuse to fully trust God for all our needs. We often get tired of waiting on His promises and move forward in our own thoughts, strength, and plans.

It is your responsibility to study the Scriptures to learn what God says about your sin and how He responds to your sin. The Word of God teaches that He is not angry with you. Jesus the Son has taken the punishment for your sins. God loves you and is willing to forgive you as you acknowledge your sin and repent.

**Isaiah 53:6** “We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to our own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all.”

**II Chronicles 7:14-15** “if my people, who are called my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land. Now my eyes will be opened and my ears attentive to the prayers offered in this place.”

However, when we refuse to confess and acknowledge our sin, the Lord will pass judgment on us. As we study the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God (See Chapter 1), we learn some areas of how our Heavenly Father thinks. When we do not

follow the Biblical principles of repentance, He perceives it as though we are declaring to Him that we have no sin.

**Jeremiah 2:35** “Yet you say, ‘I am innocent; he is not angry with me.’ But I will pass judgment on you because you say, ‘I have not sinned.’”

The fruit of having an unrepentant attitude is that *our* righteousness is enough. Because we are not adulterers and murderers, we feel our lesser sins are unnoticeable to God. Many become content with having a form of godliness, but praise themselves for doing their best to do good. This belittles the work of the cross, and denounces Christ’s requirement of obedience to His ways. We cannot be good enough to compensate for the value of what Christ did on the cross.

**Isaiah 64:6** “All of us have become like one who is unclean, and all our righteous acts are like filthy rags; we all shrivel up like a leaf, and like the wind our sins sweep us away.”

In the context of that scripture, “filthy rags” means menstrual cloth.

The action of regular repentance creates a short account of sin between us and our Heavenly Father. As we repent, we align with the righteousness of Christ and His fulfillment on the cross and the Heavenly Father sees us through the sinless blood of Jesus. This is the process in order to have His favor.

**Habakkuk 1:13a** “Your eyes are too pure to look on evil; you cannot tolerate wrong.”

- **Flesh is Never Satisfied and Cannot be Trusted**

**Galatians 6:8** “The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature will reap destruction; the one who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap eternal life.”

The flesh demands to dominate and control the whole person. The cravings of the flesh are not logical. This is why Jesus taught in **Matthew 16:24** “Then Jesus said to his disciples, ‘If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow me.’”

- **Sowing to the Flesh**

The use of tobacco products produces a short, pleasant effect in the brain. When the effect ends, the user wants more to satisfy the original sensation. This pattern is called “chasing”. It is the flesh seeking the original sensation of the drug. It takes more and more. Then addiction develops. Many smokers suffering from COPD, emphysema, or lung cancer will smoke until they die. This means their flesh has been in charge until the end.

Drinking alcohol produces a temporary pleasant numbing in the brain. The person uses alcohol to self-medicate emotional pain and to loose inhibitions. When the effect ends, the drinker will desire more alcohol. Addiction develops. Even as a drinker is dying of cirrhosis of the liver, he will drool at the thought of having another drink of alcohol. Also, the fruit of this action is they were not able to overcome the desires of the flesh.

Gluttony is the over-indulgence or lack of self-restraint in food, drink, or other appetites. Even knowing the consequences of overeating, if the flesh is in charge, a person will crave more. This means those who are consumed by gluttony have not “taken up their cross” to follow Jesus daily. It is written in Revelation that there are tremendous rewards for those who overcome. There will always be spiritual warfare in our ventures in this area. I have heard it said, “The stomach is a wonderful servant but a horrible master.”

When it comes to sowing to the flesh, we are called to overcome. It is not sufficient to say that the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak. We as elect believers know that the spirit and the flesh war with one another. **Galatians 5:16-22** We are still held accountable naturally and spiritually for not allowing God to help us overcome these areas. **II Peter 2:19** proclaims that a man is a slave to whatever master’s him. We are not called to be slaves to anything except service to Jesus Christ our Lord and Savior.

- **Acts of the Flesh Reveal Our Sinful Natures**

**Galatians 5:19-21** “The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.”

It has been said, “If you do not crucify the flesh privately, your flesh will crucify you publicly.”

- **Crucify the Flesh**

**Galatians 5:24** “Those who belong to Christ Jesus have crucified the flesh with its passions and desires.”

As Jesus was teaching His disciples, He taught them this principle.

**Matthew 16:24** “Then Jesus said to His disciples, ‘If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow me.’”

Recognize:

There are moments when a person can suddenly see himself as God and others see him. Often, it is a shock. What should he do with this realization? We never know how strong our temptation is until we try to resist it.

When you recognize your ugly, carnal nature, repent before God.

Resist:

Begin to resist the exposed area of your carnal nature. Stop visiting the bad habits. Stop catering to the demands of your carnal nature. Don't continue to associate with those who are bound by what you are trying to overcome.

**I Corinthians 15:33** “Do not be misled; ‘Bad company corrupts good character.’”

As we become more aware of our sins, we can earnestly seek Him to help us to know Him more. He will reveal Himself through His Word, the Bible.

**Daniel 2:22** “He reveals deep and hidden things; he knows what lies in darkness, and light dwells with Him.”

**Hebrews 11:6** “And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.”

If you are having trouble understanding the principles of recognizing sin, there is a Biblical principal that says we are to ask God for wisdom.

**James 1:5** “If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him.”

- **Walk in Obedience**

We can bless our own lives and our family for generations to come. When we put down our idols and sources other than Him, the Biblical promise is to bless our family up to a thousand generations. We correct distorted views of God through confession, seeking Him, studying scripture, repentance of sin, and righteous living. As we live in obedience,

the Lord heals us of misperceptions about Him caused by our sin. We recognize God as our loving heavenly Father who wants it to go well with us and our children forever.

**Deuteronomy 5:29** “Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear me and keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!”

**Exodus 20:6** “...but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.”

**I Samuel 15:22** “Does the Lord delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the Lord? To obey is better than sacrifice and to heed is better than the fat of rams.”

### Biblical Teachings on Sin

Adam and Eve disobeyed God. When they ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, death came to them and ultimately to all animals and mankind. (See **Genesis 2:16-17**)

**Romans 6:23** “For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.”

God does not overlook sin.

The wrath of God is revealed against ungodliness and unrighteousness. (See **Romans 1:18**)

We are responsible for our personal sins. We cannot blame our parents or teachers or those who sin against us for the sins we commit. Even when we feel entitled to judge or carry unforgiveness toward someone who has hurt us, it is still sin and we are liable for it. God has called us to be a people of blessing, and we are taught in scripture to “bless those who have despitefully used us and pray for those who have mistreated us.”

There is a false belief that if we remain ignorant of a portion of the Word, we cannot be held accountable for violating that portion. This is a lie, an abusive mishandling of God’s goodness and grace.

We should never shun knowledge of God’s Word. We are responsible for our sin, whether we are rich in His Word or impoverished by our willful ignorance. We become empowered as we feast on God’s Word and apply it. Scripture reminds us in **Hosea 4:6** that God’s people perish for a lack of knowledge. The word “perish” means “to die.” When we reject knowledge of Him, He rejects us as His people. When we ignore His laws and His ways, He ignores our children. All of this is an attachment to the prior Scripture. **John 1:1,14** testifies that Jesus Christ is the Word. As we become empowered with Scripture, we become empowered with Christ.

**James 1:22** “Do not merely listen to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says.”

We are called to follow this pattern:

**Romans 16:19-20** “Everyone has heard about your obedience, so I am full of joy over you; but I want you to be wise about what is good, and innocent about what is evil. The God of peace will soon crush satan under your feet. The grace of our Lord Jesus be with you.”

Further, God has created us to detect His divine nature and discern His invisible qualities. We are given the ability to notice God’s awesome nature by looking at His creation. We are attracted to the beauty of nature and drawn to reflect upon the Creator.

**Romans 1:20** “For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities – his eternal power and divine nature – have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.”

As we study God’s nature through scripture, we are to ponder what we need from it. What do you need personally?

For example, if you have a problem with chronic feelings of rejection, read Isaiah. If you fight perversion, study Romans. If you need healing and deliverance, read the Gospels: Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John.

If you want to know the Lord more, study your Bible. It is one of the mighty weapons of warfare we use to draw close to seek Him and to know Him.

As we learn from the Bible, we are empowered to overcome sin, have abundant life, and demonstrate to others the loving nature of God.

**2 Timothy 3:16-17** “All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.”

There will be no excuse on the Day of Judgment. We cannot say we did not have the opportunity to know Him. We will not be able to blame anyone other than ourselves for our unredeemed sin or the ability to overcome.

The Bible warns we are guilty when we reject God’s Word. (See **Hosea 4:6**)

- **Common Sin Tendencies of Men and Women**

In years of ministry, I have observed satan attack men with certain tendencies in the area of personal sin. These tendencies seem to expand on masculine personality traits.

I have seen different types of personal sin more common among women. These seem to expand on feminine personality traits.

- **Men Often Struggle Against Tendencies of Pride, Anger, and Perversion**

According to the Word, it is especially difficult for a man to walk in the favor of God when he is walking in pride, anger, or perversion. Satan attacks men in these ways, and God warns of the particular dangers associated with the sins of pride, anger, and perversion.

- **Pride:**

James 4:6 “But he gives us more grace. That is why Scripture says: ‘God opposes the proud but gives grace to the humble.’”

- **Anger and Rage:**

Galatians 5:19-21 “The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, *fits of rage*, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.”

- **Perversion:**

Jeremiah 2:20-25 “Long ago you broke off your yoke and tore off your bonds; you said, *‘I will not serve you!’* Indeed, on every high hill and under every spreading tree you lay down as a prostitute. I had planted you like a choice vine of sound and reliable stock. How then did you turn against me into a corrupt, wild vine? Although you wash yourself with soda and use an abundance of soap, the stain of your guilt is still before me,” declares the Sovereign Lord. “How can you say, ‘I am not defiled; I have not run after the Baals?’ See how you behaved in the valley; consider what you have done. You are a swift she-camel running here and there, a wild donkey accustomed to the desert, sniffing the wind in her craving — in her heat who can restrain her? Any males that pursue her need not tire themselves; at mating time they will find her. Do not run until your feet are bare and your throat is dry. But you said, *‘It’s no use! I love foreign gods, and I must go after them.’*”

Embracing such ungodly beliefs and thought processes of pride, anger, or perversion creates open doors for torment from the demonic realm. These areas of unredeemed personal sin provide rights to the enemy to afflict us. The power of the demonics intensifies these emotions. They will grow stronger and become more deeply rooted if you do not resist these ungodly thought processes. They do not level off or decrease (for example, see **Romans 1:18-32**). Satan knows all of our weak points and tendencies. There is biblical reference that men who battle with these tendencies will not enter into the kingdom of Heaven. We are to examine ourselves and get these areas

straight. It is written in scripture that God will give us over to follow our own devices. This is what happens for unrepentant and unredeemed areas of our lives.

As we become empowered with the Holy Spirit, we are able to recognize and resist these tendencies. Self-control is a spiritual gift from the Holy Spirit. When men manifest pride and anger, it really means that they are not allowing the Holy Spirit to influence them in these areas. They only get angry when they are not getting what they want and when they want it. This is an elementary form of manipulation.

- **Women Frequently Battle Issues of Control, Fear, and Rejection**
- **Control:**

“Control” means the tendency to insist on being in charge. This is a dangerous rebellion against God. We are instructed to wait on the Lord and trust in Him.

The drive to control insists on dominating certain, if not most, situations. A controlling woman seeks to manipulate the people around her. This desire is usually driven by self-protection and self-preservation.

The enemy will speak to her mind and say that she should be in control. She is the person best suited for the job of being in charge. This causes the sin to become more deeply rooted. As the desire to control becomes stronger, the spirit of Jezebel is invited in. Once the spirit of Jezebel is in place, the individual starts lying, deceiving, and manipulating others to carry out the desire to control.

Control can include the accumulation of information through gossip. The gossiper uses such information to create a perception that she is an “insider” with information others do not have.

The controlling woman will not renew her strength. Instead, she will grow weary, and she will faint. A controlling woman will grow sick in her mind and body.

Many women have received healing from all forms of arthritis when control is revealed, repented for, redeemed, and released. There is a ten-generation curse set forth in **Deuteronomy 23:3-6**. This reveals that anyone dealing in control, witchcraft, and manipulation will have trouble down to the tenth generation experiencing the presence of God. He set forth this decree that affects our generational line in order to encourage us to stay away from these sins because of our deep love for our children. It is the penalty for not trusting and waiting on the Lord. The reason control and witchcraft are the same tendency is because it shows we are trying to manipulate the outcome for what we think is best. God has called us to be a people of blessing. He blesses those who bless and curses those who curse. We have to be careful about how we treat one another.

**Proverbs 3:5-6 “Trust in the Lord with all your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight.”**

When we lean on our own understanding, it is always based on life’s circumstances of hurt, rejection, pain, and disappointment. It is not centered around the promises of God.

**Isaiah 40:31 (KJV) “But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.”**

- **Fear:**

Beware of entertaining fear and anxiety. Fear is one of the most common and frequent attacks from the devil. Fear is the opposite of the Biblical commands for a woman of God. Even if you have seen this tendency in your generational line, it is NOT God. He commands us in scripture to be anxious for nothing.

**Philippians 4:6-7 “Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus.”**

**I Peter 3:6 “like Sarah, who obeyed Abraham and called him her Master. You are her daughters if you do what is right and do not give way to fear.”**

The enemy speaks continually to our minds with anxious thoughts and fear-based lies. If a woman chooses to accept such lies, she embraces ungodly beliefs. Scriptures related to “fear not, do not be afraid, you are not alone,” repeat themselves through God’s Word. When we do give way to fear, it is an antichrist thought process because it is against the Word.

Many women do not understand we have the daily choice to believe God and His Word or the devil's lies. Embracing such an ungodly belief creates a door or a legal right to satan and his demonic. Also, it will become a crippling form of torment. If you fall prey to fear, you will soon have demons intensifying those fears causing it to grow. If you feed this tendency it grows, but if you starve it, it dies.

God teaches that when we do not listen to Him and refuse to submit to Him, He will give us over to our own devices. He considers us to be stubborn and rebellious to His ways.

**Psalm 81:11-12 “But my people would not listen to me; Israel would not submit to me. So, I gave them over to their stubborn hearts to follow their own devices.”**

God has victory and abundance for us if we only listen to Him and follow His ways.

**Psalm 81:13-16 “If my people would but listen to me, if Israel would follow my ways, how quickly would I subdue their enemies and turn my hand against their foes! Those who hate the Lord would cringe before him, and their punishment would last**

forever. But you would be fed with the finest of wheat; with honey from the rock I would satisfy you.”

**1 Peter 5:7 “Cast all your anxiety on him because he cares for you.”**

**Luke 21:34 “Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life, and that day will close on you unexpectedly like a trap.”**

**Deuteronomy 31:6 “Be strong and courageous. Do not be afraid or terrified because of them, for the LORD your God goes with you; he will never leave you nor forsake you.”**

- **Rejection:**

Rejection is based on a lie from the enemy and is debilitating to women. We need to consider the source of our thoughts. **John 8:44** testifies that satan is a liar and there is no truth in him. Often the enemy will subtly speak to our mind, thoughts of inadequacy, failure, and comparison to others. This gives a legal right to the spirit of rejection. This is due to sowing and reaping. God loves us and many times in Scripture calls us His treasured possession.

**Deuteronomy 7:6 “For you are a people holy to the LORD your God. The LORD your God has chosen you out of all the peoples on the face of the earth to be his people, his treasured possession.”**

The Bible teaches we are “fearfully and wonderfully made.”

**Psalm 139:13-16 “For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother’s womb. I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made; your works are wonderful, I know that full well. My frame was not hidden from you when I was made in the secret place. When I was woven together in the depths of the earth, Your eyes saw my unformed body. All the days ordained for me were written in your book before one of them came to be.”**

No other place in scripture says God created anything fearfully- only us. When we believe we are rejected, we believe the lie of satan rather than the truth of God. When we accept rejection, we effectively denounce many of God’s statements about us. Effectively, we tell God, “We disapprove of Your finished product.”

Embracing such an ungodly belief creates a door and becomes a legal right to satan and his demonic. If you accept the messages of rejection from the enemy, you will soon have demons of rejection, intensifying those feelings. It will continually grow until it is revealed and redeemed.

**Isaiah 41:9-10** “I took you from the ends of the earth, from its farthest corners I called you. I said, ‘You are my servant’; I have chosen you and have not rejected you. So do not fear, for I am with you; do not be dismayed, for I am your God. I will strengthen you and help you; I will uphold you with my righteous right hand.”

**Isaiah 54:10** “Though the mountains be shaken and the hills be removed, yet my unfailing love for you will not be shaken nor my covenant of peace be removed,” says the LORD, who has compassion on you.”

- **Rejection Connected to Personal Sin**

When a child is unwanted and rejected in the womb, he experiences it and carries this mindset into his life. This can happen through insecurities and fears in the mother. The baby can sense if it is loved and wanted. When a child is separated from his birth parents soon after birth, he experiences deep levels of rejection. No matter how much his mother wants to keep him when she cannot, the child will still feel unloved. This becomes a legal right to the enemy and gives him access to torment the child with these demonic attachments.

Adoption is most often a wonderful blessing for children who need parents, but it does not erase a spirit of rejection. No matter how loving a family may be who adopts this child, he will struggle with deep-seated rejection until the Lord heals him. This person often needs personal ministry to cast down a stronghold of rejection. They need to learn to forgive, bless, and release the parents that gave them away. Also, it is necessary for them to repent of the sin of judgment, anger, and hatred toward the birth parents. The enemy will always speak into their mind, “Why didn’t my parents want me? What was wrong with me? Why didn’t they love me?” Once ministry comes forth and renewal of the mind takes place, the enemy will no longer be able to lie to them.

A child can be rejected in the womb by a mother who does not trust God for strength and provision. This is the personal sin of the mother. She keeps the child and loves him, but this does not erase the spirit of rejection.

Personal sin also includes the actions of parents who keep their children but do not trust or acknowledge God. They denounce God’s Word by refusing to believe that He will sustain them. They lean to their own understanding, contrary to **Proverbs 3:5-6** and **Isaiah 46:3-4**. Personal sin may be committed by the parents, or later, by the child. The parents may fail to trust God for the new baby and all the needs and expenses associated with a child.

Personal sin includes becoming consumed with oneself. A person who was sinned against also sins when he refuses to forgive those who hurt him. He will focus on hurts inflicted by others, never considering what could have damaged the people who hurt him. Our normal tendency as damaged people are to always consider ourselves to be victims and think of the people who hurt us as perpetrators. Sometimes those we perceive as perpetrators were at one time victims themselves. If a person continues to

blame others for their own hurt, and refuses to forgive, iniquity will grow deeper within them. (See Chapter 5 on Bitter Root Judgement and Expectancy)

- **Gossip Connected to Personal Sin**

Another area of personal sin is gossip. It is personal sin because the Bible specifically warns us against this sin. The gossiper chooses to talk about others and share personal information.

Sometimes sharing information will make the person feel like an “insider”. To the gossiper, information empowers him and makes him feel he is important and “in the know.”

The Bible warns against this destructive behavior pattern. A gossiper will lure others to listen to him or her. This godless chatter will betray a confidence. He or she will stir up conflict and separate close friends and this person cannot be trusted. A gossip talks too much, and we are to avoid talking with that person. There is a biblical teaching that says not to share in each other’s sin. (See I Timothy 5:20)

**Prov. 16:28 “A perverse person stirs up dissension, and a gossip separates close friends.”**

**Prov. 20:19 “A gossip betrays a confidence; so avoid a man who talks too much.”**

**Ephesians 4:29 “Do not let any unwholesome talk come out of your mouths, but only what is helpful for building others up according to their needs, that it may benefit those who listen.”**

**II Timothy 2:16-17 “Avoid godless chatter, because those who indulge in it become more and more ungodly. Their teaching will spread like gangrene.”**

- **Satan Never Gives Good Gifts**

**John 10:10 “The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full.”**

Satan tempts us in the natural realm and offers us fleshly enticements. He knows our weaknesses.

For example, satan offered Jesus bread after He had been fasting for forty days. Satan offered Jesus power in the material world. Finally, satan offered Jesus political power over all the world's kingdoms. Jesus defeated satan by responding to his temptations with scripture. This exhausted satan and he left Jesus alone for a season. We are called to follow His example and do the same.

**II Corinthians 10:3-5 “For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the**

**contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”**

Satan can only offer short-term pleasures. Often, he tailors temptations to our histories, personalities, and family tendencies, but what he offers is superficial and temporary. Satan’s goals are to defile us, steal our peace, and pull us away from the favor of God. Satan never gives good gifts. He seeks to defile us as young as possible. He wants to defile us before we have the knowledge and strength to resist him.

Barbara smoked cigarettes for forty years. Barbara was sophisticated, well-educated, and fashionable. At age sixteen, she had been enticed to smoke by seeing beautiful movie stars smoke onscreen. She wanted to be like them. She pictured herself smoking and being glamorous.

By the time she was fifty-six years old, she knew that if she wanted to live long, she needed to quit smoking. To stop smoking, she decided to get hypnotized. Although Barbara had attended church most of her life, she did not ask the Lord for healing and deliverance. She believed the lie that she was not able to stop without the assistance of a hypnotist. Barbara did not seek the Lord before she submitted to this idea. God did not resist her free will. Apparently, she did not believe God would heal her because she had never seen anyone healed in church.

Instead, she believed the lies of satan. She sought after ungodly help. By doing this, it became a right to the enemy and opened her mind and body to the demonic realm. Barbara immediately stopped smoking and has not smoked since that hypnosis session. Satan gave her a “gift,” but it was not a good gift.

Two weeks after the hypnosis, her heart stopped working correctly. She went into congestive heart failure. She received a pacemaker, remains extremely weak, and has never had a healthy day since she submitted to hypnosis. She is now in her late seventies and has been frail, sickly, and weak for twenty years.

The personal sin is Barbara’s failure to trust and seek her healing and deliverance from the Lord. She believed the dangerous lies of satan rather than the truth in God’s Word.

### **Satan is a Liar and a Murderer**

We need to observe the treachery of satan. He has been practicing deception from the beginning and has become a master of it.

Not acknowledging God as Lord of all is a personal sin that gives satan a legal right to blind us spiritually.

**II Corinthians 4:4 “The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.”**

Jesus declared when teaching about satan in **John 8:44b** “**He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies.**”

Our enemy, satan, is our adversary, antagonistic to the plans and purposes God has for us. He hates us and resists our efforts to know and please God. He is crafty and experienced in deception and disguised himself to deceive Eve and lie to her (See **Genesis 3**).

To us, satan can disguise himself as an angel of light (**II Corinthians 11:14**). Satan is subtle. When we consider professing Christ as Savior or giving up the idolatry of a significant sin habit, the enemy tells us we have plenty of time to change. He tempts us to pause before getting saved or renouncing a long-held addiction. He encourages us to continue in persistent sin habits that the Bible teaches will keep us out of the kingdom (See **I Corinthians 6:9-10**.) All this conversation happens within our own mind. We get confused and feel that we are speaking with ourself, because it sounds like our own voice. Whenever we hear a voice contradicting the promises of the Word of God, it's always satan talking. This is how we're able to consider the source of the voice and take that thought captive.

Satan will tempt you with the persistent thought, “God just made me this way.” Satan will whisper, “You deserve this. You work hard. What is the matter with a little fun?”

**I Peter 5:8** “**Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour.**”

- **Studying God's Word Protects Us From Deception**

It is personal sin to refuse to read and study God's Word.

Some people accept a seductive and deceptive understanding of grace because they do not study the Bible. There is a modern-day false teaching called hyper-grace where ministry leaders show by example that we can openly sin. They misuse the grace of the Lord by saying it is sufficient to take away intentional sin through repentance. They rely on praying the “sinner's prayer” but do not give up sin habits. They refuse to acknowledge the Scriptures that warn us to give up habitual sin. They feel entitled to salvation, having prayed the “sinner's prayer”. This abuses the grace of God. They sin and do not resist the flesh. They do not heed the Biblical warnings about the consequences of persistent sin habits. The true teaching of the Word of God is to “be holy, for I am holy”. Stay away from any appearance of evil and let nothing master you. We are instructed to not be consumed or enslaved to any sin.

Some people believe, wrongly, that if they do not read the Bible, they will not be held accountable for its contents. This is personal sin.

**Romans 1:20, “For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities — his eternal power and divine nature — have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.”**

- **Job Resisted Satan**

Job feared God, shunned evil, and regularly made blood sacrifices to God for himself and his family. He was a righteous man. God bragged to Satan saying “Have you considered my servant, Job?” God said there was “none like him.” Satan complained about the hedge of protection God placed around Job and his family and his belongings. God removed the hedge temporarily, and we now have the story of Job’s struggles of faith and his ultimate victory. Satan hated Job and wanted to kill him.

God loved Job and was proud of his faithfulness, even during testing (See **Job**, esp. chapters 1 and 2). In all of Job’s suffering, he never sinned. He suffered, but he did not doubt God or renounce Him. As we follow Job’s pattern of fearing God, shunning evil, and repenting of our sin and the sins of our family, we have the ability to have that hedge of protection, as well.

### **Prayer and Weapons to Resist the Devil**

Jesus taught His disciples to pray regularly. We are to repent of sin, ask for protection against temptation, and ask for deliverance from evil (**Matthew 6; Luke 11**).

Jesus describes in the parable of the sower the fate of four types of seed. This parable is about how people respond to the Gospel (the “seed” in the parable). Jesus told His disciples, “**Whoever has ears, let them hear.**” (**Matthew 13:3-9**).

We should carefully consider the paths of our feet. **Proverbs 4:26** Are we changing for the better? Do I detect spiritual progress in my own life? Jesus said to His disciples at the last supper that a person should examine themselves before they eat the bread and drink from the cup. (See **II Corinthians 11:28**)

Weapons of our warfare include the Word of God, the Name of Jesus, and the Blood of Jesus. We can defeat the enemy through prayer, repentance, and our worship of the Lord.

Fellowship with other saints encourages and strengthens us, as we testify to each other of the goodness and power of God. That’s why scripture tells us in **Hebrews 10:25** to not give up meeting together. The Word testifies of us meeting together as iron sharpening iron. **Proverbs 27:17**

**Revelation 12:11a** “They overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony.”

**Ephesians 6:10-18** “Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God, so that you can take your stand against the devil’s schemes. For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand. Stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around your waist, with the breastplate of righteousness in place, and with your feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. In addition to all this, take up the shield of faith, with which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. Take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. And pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers and requests. With this in mind, be alert and always keep on praying for all the saints.”

The Bible provides abundant teaching and encouragement to pray and resist the devil. It is personal sin to refuse to produce fruit in keeping with repentance.

**Matthew 3:8**, “Produce fruit in keeping with repentance.” (See also **Luke 3:8**)

**Isaiah 30:15a** “This is what the Sovereign Lord, the Holy one of Israel says: ‘In repentance and rest is your salvation, in quietness and trust is your strength.’”

- **Unrepentant Sexual Sin**

God gives the unrepentant sinner over to the consequences of his or her sin. In **Romans 1:18-32**, the Word describes three levels of increasing severity in spiritual darkness that oppress those who practice these sins.

These three dangerous levels of oppression, described in the first chapter of Romans, are **sexual impurity** (verse 24), **shameful lusts** (verse 26), and the worst, a **depraved mind** (verse 28). A depraved mind indicates a continual, unsatisfied lust for deeper levels of depravity. As each level of sexual sin becomes deep rooted, God gives us over to our own devices. The way God perceives our pursuit of deeper levels of perversion is that we have no fear or acknowledgement of Him and no regard for His requirements. As earlier mentioned in this chapter, God’s perception of this sin is us saying to Him, “I will not serve You, and I love foreign gods, and I must go after them.” **Jeremiah 2:20-25** Although scripture states that the fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom and the knowledge of the Holy One is understanding (See **Proverbs 9:10**), the deceived sinner’s thinking has become futile and foolish.

**Romans 1:18-32** “The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men, who suppress the truth by their wickedness, since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse. For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were

darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. Therefore God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator—who is forever praised. Amen. Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion. Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, He gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless. Although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death, they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them."

We are seeing the truth of this Scripture in our culture today. Practicing homosexuals and transgenders have introduced legal and political agendas promoting perversion. Homosexuality is presented as an acceptable alternative lifestyle. They want homosexuals to lead youth groups and Scout troops. They demand homosexuals be glorified in all cultural arenas. Further, they seek approval of perversion in all areas of society, including some denominational churches, and punish those who express disapproval. They reserve their strongest attacks for Christians who uphold the Biblical standard of sexual purity.

There is a lie often repeated in compromised denominations accepting homosexual "marriage". The lie is the belief that "God made me this way" combined with "God is love". The rationale is since God loves the homosexual, and the homosexual was "born that way", then it must be all right. But this deception ignores the truth and nature of personal sin and the healing and delivering power of the Cross. This tragic lie will keep the unrepentant sinner in life-long bondage and send him to hell.

**Hebrews 10:26-27 "If we deliberately keep on sinning after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sins is left, but only a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies of God."**

God's design for mankind from the beginning was to bless the man and woman. He sent them out to be fruitful and multiply – to increase and subdue the earth. Homosexuality has no ability to fulfill this command of God.

**Genesis 1:27-28a** “So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. God blessed them and said to them, ‘Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it.’”

God specifically warns us in **Isaiah 5:20-21**, “Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil, who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter. Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes and clever in their own sight.”

We see many people in our culture who are aligning with the homosexual agenda because they are afraid to stand against this aggressive minority. True love is teaching someone the truth so that things will go well with them during this natural life and throughout eternity—just as we would teach our children right from wrong. The Bible states we are not to share in one another’s sin.

**I Timothy 5:22b** “and do not share in the sins of others. Keep yourselves pure.”

The practice of perversion is personal sin. No matter what the world says, sexual activity outside of the marriage of one man with one woman is personal sin. If we are involved in this sin, it is our choice, and we will be held accountable for all unredeemed sin.

Seasoned Christians, who are empowered with the Holy Spirit, believe there is an agenda of what must come according to scripture and be fulfilled. I have heard teachings and personally believe we are being forced to accept homosexual sin in preparation for the coming of the antichrist.

Daniel had a vision of the end times and described this deceptive king to come.

**Daniel 11:36-37** “The king will do as he pleases. He will exalt and magnify himself above every god and will say unheard-of things against God of gods. He will be successful until the time of wrath is complete, for what has been determined must take place. He will show no regard for the gods of his fathers or for the *one desired by women*, nor will he regard any god, but will exalt himself above them all.”

I believe this scripture testifies that the antichrist will be a homosexual. There are many teachings throughout the Christian community that state this verse means the antichrist will not have normal affections for women. The softer side of mankind (which is a woman) will have no influence on this end time king’s thoughts or actions.

The modern media portrays there are homosexuals in each family, every workplace, and throughout all society. We are being desensitized to accept this sin as a normal lifestyle. The actual percentage of homosexuals is a very small number in comparison to heterosexual relationships. This is a great form of deception that is taking place. It mocks the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God. It shows no regard to the plans of God for mankind and questions His integrity relating to all creation. It also loudly proclaims there is no fear of God with this sinful lifestyle.

**Proverbs 9:10 “The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom, and knowledge of the Holy One is understanding.”**

Many practicing homosexuals acknowledge themselves as agnostics or atheists in order to feel no conviction attached to this sin.

In **Genesis 9:7-17**, God tells a wonderful story to Noah of a covenant promise to him and all mankind. God said, **“As for you, be fruitful and increase in number; multiply on the earth and increase upon it...I establish my covenant with you: Never again will all life be cut off by the waters of a flood; never again will there be a flood to destroy the earth...this is a covenant for all generations to come...I have set my rainbow in the clouds, and it will be the sign of the covenant between me and the earth...Whenever the rainbow appears in the clouds, I will see it and remember the everlasting covenant between God and all living creatures of every kind on the earth. So God said to Noah, This is the sign of the covenant I have established between me and all life on the earth.”**

This is the true meaning and purpose of the rainbow. Once we understand these scriptures, it is easy to see why the Christian community is offended with the gay pride and transgender movement using the rainbow as their symbol. We consider this to be a mockery of God’s promise for mankind.

The true heart of our Heavenly Father is that all will turn to Him, acknowledge their sin, and repent. He calls us to follow and trust Him in all aspects of our life. His grace and love are amazing and carries generational blessings.

**II Timothy 3:16-17 “All scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness, so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.**

**Isaiah 55:6-9 “Seek the Lord while he may be found; call on him while he is near. Let the wicked forsake his way and the evil man his thoughts. Let him turn to the Lord, and he will have mercy on him, and to our God, for he will freely pardon. ‘For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways,’ declares the Lord. ‘As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.’”**

As Christians, we must resist sin leading to death. We love our neighbors enough to tell them the truth and warn them that approval and practice of such sin leads to death. We need to tell them what the Bible says, and not settle for what the compromising culture says.

**Romans 12:1-2 “Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as a living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God—this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is—his good, pleasing and perfect will.”**

**I Corinthians 6:9-10 “Do you not know that the wicked will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: Neither the sexually immoral nor idolaters nor**

**adulterers nor male prostitutes nor homosexual offenders nor thieves nor the greedy nor drunkards nor slanderers nor swindlers will inherit the kingdom of God.”**

Also, we as believers should realize we are being held accountable as to whether we are ashamed of the Gospel.

**Mark 8:38 “If anyone is ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when he comes in his Father’s glory with the holy angels.”**

There is personal sin attached to the transgender movement. It is an abuse of free will and a rebellious choice to pursue this lifestyle. These individuals are stating God has made a mistake in the way He has created them. They are loudly proclaiming He made a mistake in their DNA. God created and designed all DNA. He is the master and an expert in His creation. He makes no mistakes! In this scripture the term “potsherds” is used, which means broken pots.

**Isaiah 45:9-12 “Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker, to him who is but a potsherd among the potsherds on the ground. Does the clay say to the potter, ‘What are you making?’ Does your work say, ‘He has no hands?’ Woe to him who says to his father, ‘What have you begotten?’ or to his mother, ‘What have you brought to birth?’ This is what the Lord says—the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: Concerning things to come, do you question me about my children, or give me orders about the work of my hands? It was I who made the earth and created mankind upon it. My own hands stretched out the heavens; I marshalled their starry host.”**

God has given us instruction in His word relating to how we should dress.

**Deuteronomy 22:5 “A woman must not wear men’s clothing, nor a man wear women’s clothing, for the Lord your God detests anyone who does this.”**

The only principle written in scripture that is stronger than the end-time agenda is **II Chronicles 7:14-15**, which says **“If my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land. Now my eyes will be opened and my ears attentive to the prayers offered in this place.”**

He demands to be acknowledged as Lord of all and is a jealous God. He demands that we have no idol or source other than Him. His requirement for us is for sin to be acknowledged, repented for, and released. This allows renewal of our minds to take place where we were once bound by personal sin.

- **Unrepentant Sin**

One’s personal unredeemed sin creates a door between an individual and the demonic realm. In **Matthew 12:43-45**, Jesus taught about the activities of demons and deliverance. He described the person as a “house”. Demons entered and departed

through the door of the house. Impure spirits can enter into us through the right of unredeemed personal sin. For example, the sin of sexual perversion invites in impure spirits of perversion. Receiving the lie of rejection creates a right for demonics of rejection and seduction to enter the “house”. Lying creates a right for the spirit of witchcraft, lies, and deception to enter the “house”.

**Matthew 12:43-45** “When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the house I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first. That is how it will be with this wicked generation.”

Our personal sin, known and unknown, activates the demonic in our lives. This unredeemed sin becomes a legal right, and an open door to tormenting spirits. It’s our job to acknowledge sin, repent for it, and close that door. These Biblical principles operate, whether or not we believe in them. Unredeemed personal sin becomes a right for the devil to torment the sinner and causes a loss of favor with God in that area. We need to realize that personal sin is not always something we do. It can be things we choose not to do. We may choose not to study the Word of God, or to love one another, or to trust in the Lord in all of our ways. The list could go on and on. It depends on the free will of the person and if they are willing to surrender difficult areas to the Lord. Even if we know the requirements of God, many times we make choices to disobey due to our own prior experiences, circumstances, or opinions. This is personal sin and needs to be redeemed.

- **The Blood Sacrifice of Jesus**

The only human being who was born sinless and committed no sin was Jesus of Nazareth.

**I Peter 2:22** “He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in his mouth.” [quote of Isaiah 53:9]

**John 1:29** “The next day John (the Baptist) saw Jesus coming toward him and said, ‘Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!’”

Believers in Jesus accept His blood sacrifice as able to take away our sin through repentance.

**I John 1:7** “But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin.”

Acknowledging the sin, repenting of it, and believing that the Blood of Jesus is able to take it away cleanses and redeems us from the sin and all of its attachments. When we repent of our sins, Jesus Christ is faithful to forgive us.

**I John 1:9 “If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just and will forgive us our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.”**

As we study God’s Word, we begin to recognize His ways and how He has interacted with us from the beginning. God sees our behavior, and measures our fruit, not merely our words. God is an active God. He bases his righteous judgment on our fruit (what we produce for the Kingdom of God), not talk or intentions.

When we acknowledge our sins and repent, God pardons us through the blood sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. The Lord requires a blood sacrifice to cover and atone for sin. When we acknowledge sin and repent, the Heavenly Father sees us through the shed blood of Jesus. Then we acquire the gift of sharing in Christ’s sinlessness, His righteousness, and holiness.

**I John 2:2 “He (Jesus) is the atoning sacrifice for our sin, and not only for ours but also for the sins of the whole world.”**

**Leviticus 17:11 “For the life of a creature is in the blood, and I have given it to you to make atonement for yourselves on the altar; it is the blood that makes atonement for one’s life.”**

An abundance of unrepentant sin will cause the favor of the Heavenly Father to diminish. As our sin accumulates, He can no longer look upon us with joy. His eyes are too pure to look upon evil. As soon as we repent, he turns toward us seeing us through the shed Blood of Jesus. This is the gift of repentance.

**Habakkuk 1:13a “Your eyes are too pure to look on evil; you cannot tolerate wrong.”**

Some Christians teach there is no need to continue the practice of repentance of sin after salvation. Their belief is that once they accept Christ as Lord and Savior, there is no need to continue this process because the salvation prayer covers all sin: past, present and future. This is not a Biblical principle. There are many references that tell us to walk in repentance. When we avoid the practice of repentance, the Heavenly Father perceives that we are saying we have no sin. Our righteousness is enough. The prophet Isaiah told God’s people that all their righteous acts were like “filthy rags.”

In **Genesis 3:21**, the Lord covered the naked Adam and Eve with the skins of animals after they had sinned. The animals had to be sacrificed and used to cover the nakedness of the two sinners.

From the beginning, God established blood sacrifices for the remission of sins (**Hebrews 9:22**). This pattern is repeated many times in Scripture, throughout the early history of man, the people of Israel, and during the life of Jesus.

**Hebrews 9:22 “In fact, the law requires that nearly everything be cleansed with blood, and without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness.”**

In His perfect timing, Father God sent His Son Jesus into the world to save everyone who would believe in Him. Jesus did this by sacrificing His own life to ransom our lives. He shed His own blood, dying in our place, paying the price for our sins.

**John 3:16 “For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.”**

Shortly after the earthly ministry of Jesus, blood sacrifices by the Jewish people ceased. The Jewish Temple in Jerusalem was destroyed in 70 A.D. and has never been rebuilt. The blood sacrifice of Jesus Christ was accomplished once and forever (See Hebrews 10).

In our struggles against personal sin, none of us has struggled like Jesus battled during His life on earth. As we resist sin in our own lives, satan will tempt us with self-pity. The Word reminds us Jesus resisted sin throughout his life, never sinned, and shed his pure blood for our sin. When we repent, the sacrifice of Jesus is accepted by the Father to purify us of all unrighteousness.

**Hebrews 12:4 “In your struggle against sin, you have not yet resisted to the point of shedding your blood.”**

- Unbelievers are Blind

**II Corinthians 4:4 “The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel that displays the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.”**

The god of this age and world is satan. He has blinded the minds of unbelievers. God has allowed this as a penalty for unredeemed sin, rebellion, and idolatry. There are non-believers who revel in their ungodly ideas. There are also those who claim to believe in God and Jesus Christ but are blind to their own sin. They act like non-believers and do not follow the ways of the Lord. Many create systems which they live by blending in decency and kindness instead of godliness.

**Hosea 4:6 “my people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.’”**

The KJV uses the word “perish” instead of destroyed.

God continues to warn people who consider themselves Christians that they may be destroyed because of their own refusal to know and seek Him.

There are many people who do not study the Bible, do not attend church, and make no effort to learn the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God. They perish from a lack of knowledge and understanding that is readily available to them. Perish means to die.

- **Empowered to Overcome Personal Sin by the Holy Spirit**

At the end of His earthly ministry, Jesus announced to His followers He would be going back to heaven and the Holy Spirit would be coming to earth.

**John 16:7-8** “But I tell you the truth: it is for your good that I am going away. Unless I go away, the Counsellor will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you. When he comes, he will convict the world of guilt in regard to sin and righteousness and judgment.”

**John 16:13** “But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come.”

**Luke 24:49** “I am going to send you what my Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high.”

The Holy Spirit is the third person in the Trinity. He is here on earth to empower and to be with us. As Jesus promised, the Holy Spirit came to believers on the Day of Pentecost in fulfillment of prophecy (See **Acts 2; Joel 2:28**). Pray for the baptism in the Holy Spirit. (See Prayer to Receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit at the end of this chapter). Also, there are other deep teachings on receiving the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. My friend and fellow minister, Dr. Mark Virkler, has wonderful teachings on this. It can be found at [cwgministries.org](http://cwgministries.org). Under the tab “resources,” click “Baptism of the Holy Spirit.”

**Matthew 7:7-11** “Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened. Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

- **Gift of Power to Overcome**

The Holy Spirit is a “good gift” of empowerment. We have the wonderful opportunity to be in close, personal fellowship with the Lord. Ask the Holy Spirit to come into your life and empower you to live for God. Confess your sins, repenting sincerely of anything not pleasing to God. Ask Him to empower you to recognize sin. If you have trouble recognizing personal sin, ask God for the wisdom and empowerment to recognize it.

**James 1:5** “If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him.”

Before receiving the empowerment of the Holy Spirit, a person may not experience a conviction of sin. Yield yourself to God. Ask Him to convict you of your sin.

As a loving father, the Lord who loves you will convict and empower you to overcome sin. As we repent of our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive.

- **Reveal, Redeem, and Release**

When we are convicted of our sin and fully repent of it, godly sorrow brings salvation and leaves no regret. We must acknowledge, feel sorrow, and repent. Then we are called to take up our cross daily and follow Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith. This brings us into a place of renewal-no longer thinking the same.

**II Corinthians 7:10 “Godly sorrow brings repentance that leads to salvation and leaves no regret, but worldly sorrow brings death.”**

**Hebrews 5:11-14 “We have much to say about this, but it is hard to explain because you are slow to learn. In fact, though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you the elementary truths of God’s word all over again. You need milk, not solid food! Anyone who lives on milk, being still an infant, is not acquainted with the teaching about righteousness. But solid food is for the mature, who by constant use have trained themselves to distinguish good from evil.”**

Empowerment by the Holy Spirit will change your life. The Holy Spirit helps us to live godly lives. He is our Counsellor and Comforter, and He will reveal truth about our personal sin.

The Word tells us to be holy. The meaning of “holy” in this context is to be set apart. We set ourselves apart from old sin habits and accelerate the process of becoming more like Jesus and less like the sinful world.

**I Peter 1:15-16 “But just as He who called you is holy, so be holy in all you do; for it is written: ‘Be holy, because I am holy.’”**

We should deliberately give up offenses the Bible says are not pleasing to God. As we acknowledge our sin, we should not only repent, but we are also called to repent of the idolatry in pursuing that sin. Often sin is a source we use other than Him, and therefore it is a form of idolatry. This breaks the rights to the enemy in this area and gives us empowerment from God to overcome.

- **Practical tips to acknowledge and overcome personal sin:**
  1. Personal consideration of my life. What things do I refuse to accept from God's Word?
  2. Make myself admit personal sin habits.
  3. With continual effort, make myself refrain from falling into the familiar personal sins.
  4. What are the specific things that enslave me? (Example: sexual sin, addictions, unforgiveness, judgment of others, anger, need to control others, etc.)
  5. Personal sin is not always what I do, but also what I refuse to do. (Examples, I refuse to fear God; I refuse to train myself in God's Ways; I refuse to answer God's call on my life; I refuse to tithe; I refuse to love people who are different from me; I refuse to bless others; etc.)
  6. During our repentance of personal sin, we are to always repent of our fleshly weakness. In proper repentance, we repent of the sin of the idolatry attached to our pursuit of sin.



## Prayers

### 1. Prayer of Repentance of Personal Sin

Dear Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I repent of all personal sin in my life. I ask You to forgive me and cleanse me. Some areas of sin I know; other areas of sin I do not recognize. But Your Word promises You are faithful and just to forgive all our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.

I ask You to reveal all areas of personal sin, known and unknown, so I may more deeply repent. Your sheep hear Your voice. You will speak to my heart and mind, and I will hear You. If there are areas in which I am perishing for a lack of knowledge, I ask You to reveal Your truth to me. In Jesus' Name, I will not reject Your truth.

I specifically repent of anger, pride, perversion, idolatry, addiction, greed, fear, control, manipulation, judgment, accusation, gossip (here insert area of specific sin or sins, such as fear of lack, fear of rejection, fear of failure, fear of success, etc.) Convict me of my sin, O God, so I may see my sin and repent to the depths of my soul. Also, repent of the sin of the idolatries attached to my pursuing them instead of learning to follow your ways. Forgive me for any rebellion in ignoring and misusing your requirements. I break down any blended systems of godliness and mixtures of the world that I have created in Jesus' Name. There is no righteousness in me on my own, but I am made righteous by the Blood of Jesus. Your Word promises that as we repent, we step into the righteousness of Jesus Christ. Your mercy is great toward me, and You will freely pardon.

As far as the east is from the west, so far have You removed my transgressions from me.

By Your Holy Spirit, empower me to overcome personal sin in my life. I confess I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me. The prayer of a righteous person will avail much. Show me Your ways, that I may know You more and walk in Your ways all the days of my life, in Jesus' Name.

### 2. Prayer to Receive the Baptism in the Holy Spirit

Heavenly Father, I come to You in the Name of Jesus, Your Son, Who has saved me. I repent of my sins and ask You to wash me clean by the Blood of Jesus.

Jesus said, "And I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper (Comforter, Advocate, Intercessor—Counselor, Strengthener, Standby), to be with you forever—the Spirit of Truth, whom the world cannot receive [and take to its heart] because it does not see Him or know Him, but you know Him because He (the Holy Spirit) remains with you continually and will be in you." **John 14:16 (AMP)**

In **Mark 1:8**, John the Baptist promised that while he baptized with water, You would baptize with the Holy Spirit and fire. So, Lord, I ask You to baptize me with Your Holy Spirit and fire. I am thankful as I ask for your empowerment and fire, it will refine

me into who you have called and created me to be. I know You indwelled me at my salvation (**John 20:22; Romans 8:9**). Now, I ask You to fill me to overflowing with Your Presence, Your power, and Your joy.

You promised in **Acts 1:5-8** that Your disciples would receive power and ability when the Holy Spirit would come upon us. You promised to give us power to be Your witnesses even to the ends of the earth. This wonderful promise was fulfilled at the Feast of Pentecost in Jerusalem, as described in Acts 2.

I pray the Holy Spirit come upon me now. I yield myself to You. I pray you breathe on me a breath of refreshment and empowerment. I receive by faith the baptism of the Holy Spirit. I welcome you, Holy Spirit, in the Name of Jesus. Thank You for empowering me for Your service. Fill me with boldness and courage to speak Your Word with power. I receive this wonderful empowerment by faith.

As promised in **John 14:26**, send me the Holy Spirit, the Advocate, to teach me all things and remind me of everything You teach in Your Word.

I desire spiritual gifts according to Your Word and ask You to grant me Your spiritual giftings according to Your will for my life. I joyfully accept Your gifts for me, in Jesus' Name.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

### 3. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
 all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
 all heads of python with all python eggs;  
 all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
 all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;  
 all heads of rejection;  
 all heads of fear;  
 all heads of perversion;  
 all heads of idolatry;  
 all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
 and,  
 all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.



## Chapter Eight: Alter Personalities: Definition and Teaching

### Introduction

I am excited to share this teaching with you. It has stirred within me since the Lord revealed it. The anointing of the Holy Spirit has taught me, as He promises to do.

**1 John 2:27 “As for you, the anointing you receive from him remains in you, and you do not need anyone to teach you. But as his anointing teaches you about all things and as that anointing is real, not counterfeit—just as it has taught you, remain in him.”**

The most extraordinary healings and deliverance I witness occur when alter personalities are revealed, redeemed, and released to Jesus. Further, the highest number of healings I have seen come from alter personality ministry. Through persistence in seeking the Lord for healing of His people, He showed me new things. I learned that these attachments were legal rights to the enemy that were preventing some individuals from receiving their healing. He revealed several scriptures of hope for these people.

**Jeremiah 33:33 “Call to me and I will answer you and tell you great and unsearchable things you do not know.”**

**Isaiah 42:9 “See, the former things have taken place, and new things I declare; before they spring into being, I announce them to you.”**

**Isaiah 48:6-7 “You have heard these things; look at them all. Will you not admit them? ‘From now on I will tell you of new things, of hidden things unknown you. They are created now, and not long ago; you have not heard of them before today. So you cannot say, Yes, I knew of them.’”**

**Daniel 2:22 “He reveals deep and hidden things; He knows what lies in darkness, and light dwells with Him.”**

Teaching about "alters" provides the key to many people's physical, mental, and emotional healing. I am not referring to the "altar" at the front of the church sanctuary.

**Isaiah 61:1-3 “The Spirit of the Sovereign Lord is on me, because the Lord has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to *bind up the brokenhearted* to proclaim freedom for the captives and release from darkness for the prisoners, to proclaim the year of the Lord's favor and the day of vengeance of our God, to comfort all who mourn, and provide for those who grieve in Zion—to bestow on them a crown of beauty instead of ashes, the oil of gladness instead of mourning, and a garment**

**of praise instead of a spirit of despair. They will be called oaks of righteousness, a planting of the Lord for the display of his splendor.”**

- **Promise of the Lord to Heal the Broken-hearted**

The Lord will cleanse, heal, and redeem broken areas in our lives. He will bind up the broken-hearted, proclaim freedom for the captives, and release the prisoners from bondage and darkness. He empowers us by the anointing and uses us as vessels for His ministry of deliverance and healing.

**Galatians 2:20a “I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me.”**

I have seen Jesus free men and women from life-long bondages. The Lord heals the broken-hearted. Giving or leading alter personalities to Jesus, together with the casting out of unclean spirits, provides dramatic freedom and healing, physical and mental, for many in the Body of Christ.

**Psalm 34:18: “The Lord is close to the broken-hearted and saves those who are crushed in spirit.”**

- **We Are Not to Judge Each Other**

**Isaiah 45:11 “This is what the Lord says-the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: Concerning things to come, do you question me about my children, or give me orders about the work of my hands?”**

God warns us not to judge each other. Each individual needs certain ministry, teaching, and deliverance and to have particular rights broken in their lives. Although there is some familiarity, no ministry story is ever identical to anyone else’s. It is always individual. Most people who come for ministry may know of uncomfortable circumstances in their lives, but this does not mean they know they have alter personalities. Who are we to criticize a person for having a weakness in one area or another? People all have weaknesses in different areas, and we must not judge each other.

**Isaiah 45:9 “Woe to him who quarrels with his Maker, to him who is but a potsherd among the potsherds on the ground. Does the clay say to the potter, ‘What are you making?’ ‘He has no hands?’”**

As previously mentioned, the word “potsherds” means broken pots.

**Romans 11:32 “For God has bound all men over to disobedience so that he may have mercy on them all.”**

**Romans 3:23 “For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.”**

Frequently, one will hear, "He (or she) should not feel that way." Who are we to judge how another person should feel? For example, some people are more subject to rejection and fear. Others can be sensitive to areas of anger, rage, and pride. While others are troubled by perversion and control, this is their sensitive area. We all have certain weaknesses in our life that trigger ungodly beliefs and thought processes. When we judge others for their reaction, there is a Biblical principle that teaches we condemn ourselves.

**Romans 2:1 "You, therefore, have no excuse, you who pass judgment on someone else, for at whatever point you judge the other, you are condemning yourself, because you who pass judgment do the same things."**

In ministry, we must be compassionate to others as we minister to their brokenness. But, regardless of what has occurred or what legal rights the enemy has in their lives, we work to set the captives free of bondages. The enemy who takes advantage of human weakness can cause long term affliction. This could be from a door that was opened when we were young.

Alter personalities are created from various causes in each individual. In addition, people have distinct personality characteristics and varying generational backgrounds. We are all individual in how we were created, and individual in how we respond to situations. We each have sensitive areas in our makeup, and we each create unique legal rights for the enemy to steal from us.

Jesus experienced human weakness but resisted the terrible temptations of the enemy in hunger, thirst, loneliness, power, wealth, and torment. He conquered and overcame the enemy by using the Word of God. However, a small child or person who has never learned the Word cannot prevail in the same way Jesus did. The enemy will seek to break into that vulnerable soul. The enemy loves for us to be defiled, and he works to create open doors and legal rights into our lives when we are as young as possible. As children we are not equipped to resist the devil, fight back, or stand on the promises of God. All this defilement causes ungodly beliefs together with physical and mental infirmities. The enemy strives for us to become deep-rooted and established in defilement and ungodly beliefs as young he possibly can. This causes the deception of growing up thinking that this is how God created me.

- **Definition of an Alter Personality**

What specifically do we mean by an "alter"? An alter is a splintered and separated portion of a human personality created for a specific purpose. It can be used as an invisible friend or helper. This alter is created because the person believes they are not equipped to handle a particular traumatic situation. They create this personality, based on their shortcoming, which has the ability to perform or handle what the core person believes they cannot. This is done through the spirit of mind control. When an alter personality is created, the individual unknowingly and unwillingly invites the spirit of

mind control to enter. This gives the core person the ability to disassociate when needed, but that is not all that it does. This is why the psychological term used is disassociation. This spirit causes us to think in certain ways which hold the legal right for it to remain. The rights are judgment, unforgiveness, inadequacy, fear, or rejection. This causes the person to rely on that spirit for empowerment. This spirit of mind control is a witchcraft spirit that manipulates our thought processes and makes us think certain ways. It is a legal right for the enemy to torment. It is also an open door to the demonic realm where spirits are free to come and go because the witchcraft spirit of mind control is in charge.

Alter personalities are always based on the age and perspective of its creator. For example, a three-year-old child will perceive and handle situations differently than someone who is twelve or older. Once an alter personality is created, it can become a lifestyle or pattern of a way to deal with difficulties and uncomfortable circumstances in life. Some people have created a lifestyle of alter personalities and can even lose their original identity. Alter creation does not always have to be based on extreme circumstances, such as sexual abuse or other traumatic events. It can start by someone being teased, embarrassed, or ignored. Some crave attention from friends but do not know how to get it, but the created alter does. It empowers them to get what they believe they need. Most individuals who come for ministry have more than one alter personality. These are broken parts, "splinters", "separations", or "pieces" of one's soul, i.e., one's mind, will, heart, and emotions. When a person has an alter, they are genuinely broken-hearted and need healing and deliverance. Most people who receive alter ministry are unaware of their attached alters. They may or may not remember the traumatic events in their lives, depending on the intensity of the alter. During severe trauma, an alter can be created to help the individual forget the entire event. Some have spoken of having no memories of certain blocks of times within their childhood. Others sometimes speak of having no childhood memories at all.

- **Why would an Alter Personality be Needed?**

As people in general, we come from safe and secure homes. Many of us had parents who stayed together and kept their differences and troubles between each other. It's hard for some to imagine what dissociation is, and why it would be necessary. Imagine a little girl waiting for her daddy to come home from work. He meets her at the door and picks her up. He plays with her, loves and even tickles her. She loves this attention from him. He tells her how much he missed her that day.

Moving ahead a few hours, the little girl is asleep. The same dad has had several alcoholic drinks and decides to go say good night to his little girl. With the distortion that comes from the alcohol, he starts to touch her inappropriately. This is an ideal scenario for the creation of an alter personality. Imagine the difference in the personality of the little girl who waits for her dad to come home from work, and the requirements of the little girl who has to act comfortable with this same dad smelling like alcohol and

touching her inappropriately. An alter personality is needed and created to handle the huge requirements of being violated while still loving her dad.

- **God Created Us as a Tri-Part Being**

The Bible teaches we are fearfully and wonderfully made. Nowhere in scripture is it written that the Creator of the heavens and the earth created anything “fearfully and wonderfully” aside from mankind. God created us in His likeness. God is a God of patterns. Just as God is a three part being (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit), He created us as a three part being as well (spirit, soul, and body). As a Christian, I am a living born again **spirit**, I have a **soul** (mind, will, and emotions), and I live in my **body**. We are called to acknowledge and maintain each of these three parts. Our body we take care of daily (we feed and cleanse it). Our soul is where alter personalities and hurts dwell. Our spirit needs to be recognized and allowed to come forward in worship and thrive. That’s why the Word says we worship him in spirit and truth. Be observant and make sure all these areas are fed, maintained, and redeemed.

**I Thessalonians 5:23-24 "May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul, and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. The one who calls you is faithful, and he will do it."**

### **Four Sources of the Internal Voice Speaking to Your Mind**

The Bible teaches that we are to ponder all our thoughts and take them captive. In studying the creation of alters, we must consider the source of our thoughts. We know of no other source than these four voices that speak to our minds: the first is **self**, second is the **Lord**, third is the **enemy**, and the fourth is an **alter personality**.

**II Corinthians 10:5 "We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ."**

There are several Biblical references in which we are instructed to examine ourselves. This is a form of self-evaluation and spiritual growth. We automatically do this in other aspects of our life (i.e. job progress, relational considerations, finances, family well-being, surroundings, etc.). So why not examine our spiritual thoughts and consider them as well? As believers, we are called to compare our thoughts with Biblical instruction. We should consider areas of our thought processes that do not align with the Word of God and spend time in consideration of our spiritual growth and well-being. For example, “Am I loving others as I should or responding to others in love?”, “Am I the person of blessing I am called to be or walking in judgment and unforgiveness?”, “Are my thoughts based on self-promotion, self-protection, fear, or rejection?”, “Do we think the best of others?”, “Do we love?”, “Are we patient and kind, or do we hold records of wrong?”. These things matter. We will be held accountable for unredeemed areas. He

knows our thoughts, our intentions behind them, and our heart's motivation. That is why He is called the righteous judge.

**II Corinthians 13:5** “Examine yourselves to see whether you are in the faith; test yourselves. Do you not realize that Christ Jesus is in you-unless, of course, you fail the test?”

**I Chronicles 28:9b** “For the Lord searches every heart and understands every motive behind the thoughts.”

Jesus spoke while serving his disciples the last supper (communion):

**I Corinthians 11:28** “A man ought to examine himself before he eats of the bread and drinks of the cup.”

### The Four Sources of our Internal Voice:

- **First, (self)** our mind produces analytical thoughts. Our thoughts are formed and directed by our minds, with a history of natural experiences and circumstances. Some of these circumstances are good and some are bad. This influences our thought patterns. Our minds speak to us, and a personal thought can be as simple as wondering what is for dinner. Another example is thinking about how to drive to a particular destination, or wondering what time it is.
- **Second, the Lord** sends to us spontaneous, random thoughts, the content of which always lines up with the Word of God. We could possibly even consider this to be our conscience-reminding us what is right and what is wrong. God's voice to us is encouraging, instructional, and edifying. The Holy Spirit is our Comforter, our Counselor, and He brings conviction of sin. He also reminds us of what has been written in Scripture and the things Jesus taught.

**John 14:26** “But the Counselor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you.”

- **Third, the voice of the enemy** (satan) speaks lies to our minds. Jesus warns us satan is a liar and is the father of lies. When satan lies, he speaks his native language (**John 8:44b**). Often, we hear these lies and mistakenly believe them to be our own thoughts. This scripture also states he was a murderer from the beginning. He brought death into the entire human race through deception and lies. His plans for us are never good.

Although the enemy may incorporate some fragment of truth in the thought, his foundational message is always a lie. Thus, even when the enemy brings to mind words of Scripture, his purpose is deception. He is very skilled at deception and was a deceiver

from the beginning with Adam and Eve. He is always looking for legal rights and weaknesses in our life to enter and contaminate us. Satan never gives good gifts.

**I Peter 5:8 “Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour.”**

The King James Version states he is like a “hungry lion.”

- **Fourth, Alter Personalities** we have created, speak to our minds through our thoughts. For example, an alter personality I created may speak to me, “Can you believe what they have done to me? You did not deserve to be treated that way.” This fourth voice offers false comfort and protection, reaffirming its legal right to maintain unforgiveness, judgement, and hatred towards those who cause the alter creation. As it speaks to our minds, it is reaffirming its right to be there, and empowering it’s cause of self-protection. It is a continual reminder of how someone offended or hurt us. In this process of mental torment and chatter, we continually sow judgement, and therefore reap what we loathe the most. As Christians, we know that Scripture tells us to forgive, release, and bless those who have mistreated us, and to pray for those who have persecuted us. As we follow Scriptural obedience to this requirement, the alters do not. This means that we are continually sowing judgement, hatred, and unforgiveness. So, therefore we are still reaping what we are trying to avoid the most. In an innocent situation, the voice of an alter could say, “Watch out! Remember what happened to you before,” reminding the person of an uncomfortable situation from the past. This is why Scripture tells us to trust in the Lord with all of our hearts, and lean not unto our own understanding. Our own understanding is always based on circumstances, painful experiences, and disappointments that do not necessarily line up with the Word of God. The deception of this fourth source is that most of us would consider it to be ourselves speaking, not knowing it’s an alter personality with a spirit of mind control attached that makes us think that way. Realize, until the learning process of renewal occurs, when you hear the voice in your mind, it sounds like yourself.

**Proverbs 3:5-6 “Trust in the Lord with all your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight.”**

Alters operate under the spirit of mind-control. This witchcraft spirit *makes* the person think certain ways – sometimes the thoughts are irrational. Therefore, the alters are always focused on self-protection and self-preservation of the individual. This thought process does not follow a pattern of forgiving, releasing, and blessing. Nor does it allow the Holy Spirit to convict us of ungodly beliefs that do not align with the Word of God. We don’t pray for those who have despitely used us, and we are unable to bless those who have persecuted us. **Romans 12:14** and **Matthew 5:44-45**

We can weigh our thoughts and repent of thoughts that do not line up with the Word. If we lack wisdom in this area, **James 1** says we have the ability to ask God for wisdom. It states He gives generously to all without finding fault. As we obey **II Cor. 10:5**, we can

expose ungodly beliefs in our minds. See Chapter on Ungodly Beliefs and Thought Processes.

**Psalm 51:5-6 “Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Surely you desire truth in the inner parts; you teach me wisdom in the inmost place.”**

## **How Is An Alter Formed?**

The principle of casting our cares upon the Lord is a Biblical mandate. It is a spiritual law and is true whether or not we realize or believe it. We live in a fallen world and are all subject to interaction with sinners. Most have "unredeemed areas" in their lives, areas in which they have yet to allow the Lord to heal and restore their souls. Also, the Word testifies that people perish for a lack of knowledge. The correct response to any trauma in life is to present each trauma to Jesus and ask Him to take control.

**I Peter 5:7 “Cast all your anxiety on him because he cares for you.”**

An alter is a broken part of one's heart. It is a "splinter" of one's heart, soul, and emotions. For whatever reason, the alter is subconsciously created to assist with a specialized situation that is difficult or unpleasant to the individual. Alter personalities can be created in mild or severe forms at various times in a person's life. An individual who does not understand Biblical principles and does not know the demonic realm may think disassociation is good. It seems like a quick fix to handle life's problems. This is a lie from the devil.

The core person can call upon the alter later, sometimes years later, to handle the same or similar trauma. Unfortunately, many people cannot respond faithfully to the effects of trauma because of a lack of knowledge, lack of spiritual maturity, or unwillingness to turn to the Lord. Also, some find it hard to apply the Word of God to their lives. Scripture testifies that we are to do what it says.

**James 1:22 “Do not merely listed to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says.”**

Sometimes people create systems to deal with these similar or uncomfortable situations. These systems are not usually Biblically based and are created from an individual's past circumstances. Systems are created from the remembrance of uncomfortable situations in areas of self-protection and distrust. Often these created systems have a little Scripture and a little flesh mixed up together. It's always based on self-protection when an alter personality is involved. This seems spiritual and good, but does not align with spiritual law in Scripture.

Others are unwilling to trust God. They desire to retain control of their own lives and situations. They want to manage the specific traumatic events that confront them. They are not spiritually mature enough to realize that day to day battles belong to the Lord and not us. We are to trust Him and give Him these battles.

Formation of an alter is a sin, even in a child or person who knows nothing about Biblical principles. Why? Alters are idols, which say “I can handle my own problems.” They declare that the individual who created them will not trust God in this area. An idol is any source that we rely on other than the Lord. This can be anything we use for comfort, protection, provision, joy, empowerment, or other needs we have. Instead of following the Biblical principal to trust in, wait, and depend on Him, we are instead choosing to rest in ourselves.

**Exodus 20:4 and Deuteronomy 5:8 “You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below.”**

The enemy often takes advantage of the weakness, spiritual ignorance, and vulnerability of children and youth. He seeks to defile and contaminate us at every opportunity, as early as possible and delights in this. He looks for every opportunity because a child does not have the ability to resist. Therefore, the contamination becomes deeply rooted.

- **Concept of Being “Broken-hearted”**

When my daughter was two and three years old, she waited every day at our front door for me to arrive home from work. She was excited to see me and needed me to give her my undivided attention and love. I could have hurt her deeply if I had failed to smile and immediately hug her and reciprocate her affection. If I ignored her to finish an urgent phone call or for any reason, my daughter's tender heart would have been crushed. A young child can suffer a devastating blow to her heart. The momentary inattention of a busy father would not hurt an older child or adult who could understand outward circumstances. For the tiny girl, such inattention can hurt terribly and create an entrance point for the formation of an alter. This alter would protect against future circumstances of rejection opening the door to mind control and demonics of rejection. The enemy would tell her young mind, "He is not excited to see you," or "He does not love you anymore," or “He no longer has time for you.” This is how easily a child’s heart can be broken, and an alter personality can be created. It is always based on the age and perspective of the individual creating the alter.

How much more can a young child's heart hurt to hear his parents scream, curse, and threaten separation or divorce? Many children become broken-hearted by the volatile nature of their parents' relationships. How can a child understand the dynamics of what is happening when two parents fight and then make up, not giving the child any explanation. The child's heart is broken when he loses the relationship with the father or mother who leaves the family home. The child's heart breaks as he feels the anger, misery, and rejection of the parent with whom he lives. He may suffer from the hurt and anger of both parents. He feels rejection as he loses the opportunity to live his life with both parents in the same home. This is an opportunity that the enemy can speak to a child’s mind and make the child believe that it is their fault.

When a child is physically or emotionally abused, the child's heart is broken and soul is damaged. As a result, the child creates alter personalities to survive. This level of abuse would include physical, sexual, or verbal abuse, sustained mental or emotional manipulation or cruelty, or other severe forms of mistreatment. Such a child is broken-hearted, may have multiple alters, numerous demonic spirits, and will need ministry to be whole, redeemed and restored.

Although outside actions of people can hurt any child, it is a spiritual law that the child is created to love God and cast his cares upon the Lord. Therefore, if the young child could release these hurts and cares upon the Lord, his soul would not be broken and "splintered" to the point that an alter personality is created.

- **Spirit of Mind Control: What Does It Do?**

The alter is a "splinter" or brokenness or separate part created in a person's soul (heart/mind/emotions) to aid and empower him to deal with an immediate and usually uncomfortable situation. I'm not trying to be repetitive, but this information is valuable and important. The creation of an alter becomes a legal right for the enemy to enter. As the person subconsciously creates an alter personality, he unknowingly and unwillingly invites in the spirit of mind control.

The spirit of mind control is a spirit of witchcraft, which is a high-level, demonic spirit. It immediately propels the person into disassociation, but that is not all that it does. It influences and manipulates our normal thought processes. This causes us to see no other way out. The spirit of mind control uses unforgiveness, judgment, hatred, fear, and inadequacy to maintain the alter personality, which is its legal right to be there.

Disassociation describes a wide array of experiences where an individual can detach and mentally avoid unpleasant circumstances. In more severe situations, it can be the disconnection of experiences and an inability to remember the event. For example, a person may think about an event that was tremendously upsetting yet have no feelings about it. A strong alter personality, using the spirit of mind control, may completely block the person's memory of the traumatic event.

- **Disassociation Is Not a Gift From God**

The enemy never gives good gifts. When the spirit of mind control enters the person, it does provide the ability to disassociate, but this is not all it does. The temporary mindlessness of disassociation comes with a terrible price. The spirit of mind control may block the perception of an unpleasant problem, painful experience, or traumatic event. But with such emotional numbing, or temporary avoidance, which may seem welcome at the moment, come other devastating and unforeseen consequences. The person is never able to get away from the original lie that created the alter personality. The spirit of mind control makes them think that way.

Physical infirmities may develop such as arthritis, digestive issues, bone deterioration, fibromyalgia, lupus, autoimmune diseases, addictions, and sickness/disease. Mental afflictions may develop, such as migraine headaches, confusion, manic behavior, depression, dyslexia, racing thoughts, unforgiveness, assumptions, or judgment. Other attachments can be distortion in understanding communication from others, bipolar disorder, ADHD, psychotic thoughts, schizophrenia, or other mental disorders. These come with the spirit of mind control and other demonics.

Often, people develop distorted perceptions of themselves and begin to suffer from such conditions as anorexia, bulimia, or gluttony.

People often experience "flatlining" when they have numerous alters. They feel emotionally numb. They experience no great sadness, but neither can they experience great joy.

When a person fails to turn to the Lord for help and turns subconsciously to another source, it opens a door for the enemy into the soul. An alter personality is created. The first demon to enter is the spirit of mind control. Other demons will follow. The alter personality and the spirit of mind control becomes the legal right for more demons to enter and attach themselves to the alter. The function of the alter defines the type of demonic that will be drawn by that alter. For example, an alter created by a frightening experience becomes a magnet for the demonics of fear. The legal right for the demon of fear to enter is the presence of the spirit of mind control, but the magnet is the presence of the alter handling the emotion of fear.

For example, a young child is traumatized by a highly fearful event. The child can form an alter personality to handle the stress and burden of that terrible fear. This fragment of the child's soul does nothing but handle deep dread and terror felt by the core person during that traumatic event. It protects and prevents any other reoccurring fearful events. The spirit of mind control will enter the child as the alter is created. Consequently, a spirit of fear will enter as well. The child's problems multiply. The alter personality, or splintered portion of the child's soul, has no rest from deep dread and persistent feelings of fear. This alter works below the conscious level and never gets any relief. In time, this alter becomes an exhausted portion of the personality that is never able to experience rest.

For every traumatic event, this pattern is repeated with the creation of each new alter personality in the person's life. So, for example, if the same person is traumatized years later by a sexual assault of a sexual predator, an alter or several alters to deal with the perversion could be created.

The alter of perversion takes the shame and discomfort, and embarrassment of the experience of the assault. An alter works to protect the victim against perversion. The

spirit of mind control enters. Demons of perversion are attracted and enter into the person, enabled by the spirit of mind control.

This person has created more alters that have no rest from deep dread, fear, anxiety, shame, perversion, embarrassment, and recall of the traumatic fearful events of the past. These negative feelings are kept fresh in the mind by the alter of fear, the more recent sexual assault kept fresh by the alter of perversion, and other strong emotions. These splintered portions of the soul grow weary. Some people who have a tendency to live life with many alters lose their original God-created identity. These alters “protect” all aspects of their life: performance, fear, rejection, etc.

The fatigue can affect the core person with infirmities (mental and physical), exhaustion, and feeling overwhelmed and tormented. As a result, the person lives in lack instead of living in the abundance as promised by the Lord. With this structure of self-protection, what the person loathes the most never leaves, and it never stops.

The creation of alter personalities may be from "mild" trauma arising from new or uncomfortable everyday pressures to "severe" dangerous, perverse physical and emotional torture. It is essential to understand the alter is created based on the perception and response of the person at the actual age, even as a very young child.

People create alters to do tasks in their lives that the Lord can do and longs to do as our loving heavenly Father. Alters counsel us, equip us, comfort us, protect us, but push us farther away from God. An alter is an idol that says to your mind, "I can handle my own problems."

**Psalm 81:12 “So I gave them over to their stubborn hearts to follow their own devices.”**

Alters never forgive or forget. If they did, they would lose their original function to protect. If the alter was able to forgive, it would become useless. The core person may be saved and be obedient to Scripture. They understand they must forgive, bless, and release every enemy and every person who has wronged them. The attached alters do not forgive or forget. Instead, each alter continues to sow judgment and unforgiveness, and often hatred. This means that the spiritual law of sowing and reaping is still happening. The alter personalities are fragments of our mind, will, and emotions that are not willing to forgive, bless, and release.

**Matthew 5:44 (KJV) “But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.”**

The core person described above, who may have forgiven everyone who has wronged her, nevertheless suffers from what she created. The alter is still sowing. As a result, they may reap anxiety, perversion, and other thoughts not wanted or consciously chosen. Thus, the core person experiences, through the alter, the same emotions she most dreads and loathes. (See chapter on Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy)

Dealing with the challenges of life through the creation of alter personalities is a treacherous and unhealthy path. Although we may not realize what is happening, we still suffer the consequences. It might seem to be harmless, but it is not. With each new alter, a person moves farther away from trusting God and receiving God's favor and healing. In relying on alters and demonics, a person becomes less able to hear God's voice, experience His Presence, and receive His counsel. The mental torment and chatter increases. Most often, a person does not recognize she has alters and is deceived by the enemy. Satan rarely directs all his might against a person at one time. Instead, he is a subtle deceiver. He doesn't expose himself. He works incrementally to deceive the person – bit by bit, deeper and deeper.

The person thinks the chatter in her mind is her own voice. While she longs to hear God's voice, the core person does not recognize she is becoming increasingly trapped by demonic bondage. She feels farther and farther away from God until the area of the alter becomes redeemed.

### **Examples of Alters and Formation of Alters**

Alters can be as varied as the experiences of human beings.

#### **1. The Young Pianist “Show Girl”**

A young girl is enrolled in piano lessons by her well-meaning mother. The child is of average ability and has no gift for music. She attends her weekly classes. Sometimes, she practices; sometimes, she does not. Finally, the piano recital arrives. The teacher repeatedly criticizes her for not knowing the pieces of music she is to perform before the audience. She fears she cannot perform well enough, so she willfully assumes a new mindset to get the job done according to the standards of her mother and the teacher. In desperation, she pushes herself to perform so well there will be no criticism of her performance. She is in the process of creating a performance alter.

This performance alter will take the embarrassment, pain of failure, and shame. The anxiety of the performance will not be nearly as uncomfortable while she disassociates. Her core person will not consciously bear the misery of failure if she makes mistakes during her recital. The alter rises during the performance, and the child appears more confident than the core person. Although mistakes are made, the child smiles, pushes through to the end of the piece, takes a sweeping bow, and seems to have enjoyed herself. Later, the core person gives little thought to the recital. When the

performance is over, the alter personality is no longer needed. It will be summoned once again for the next performance.

This is not harmless. Rather than turning to the Lord, the young pianist chooses another source of empowerment. Unknowingly, becoming an idolater. Her actions create a legal right for the enemy to enter her soul. She seeks wisdom and guidance from a source other than the Lord and fails to cast her cares upon Him. Instead, she follows her own devices to be empowered for her performance and creates a survival strategy. She desires to control her situation by using another source and creating an idol to replace the Lord. Having no idea this is occurring, her ignorance is no defense.

**Matthew 11:28-30** “Come to me, all you who are weary and burdened, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light.”

The creation of an alter personality is the result of her suffering from a lack of knowledge. The young girl does not know how to cast her cares on the Lord. The child may or may not become a better piano player. Tragically, she has allowed into her soul a spirit of mind control. She may have demonic spirits of fear, rejection, resentment, pride, or other spirits affecting her physical, emotional, and mental wellbeing. How blessed would this young lady be if she trusted God in this area? She has the ability to ask Him for the anointing to play the piano instead of relying on a created alter personality.

## 2. Young Soldier Grown Old “GI Joe”

A Christian man, disabled with severe health problems and emotional issues, came to me for ministry. Reserved by nature, he was significantly overweight and suffered from severe diabetes and other infirmities. His walk with the Lord was stagnant. He could not draw close to Lord and had left several churches in anger.

He had difficulties with all of his relationships. As a young man, he had been drafted into the Army and served in the Vietnam War. Despite being shy and reserved by nature, this young man obeyed the requirements of his job. Submitting to authority and pushing himself to perform as a wartime helicopter pilot, he became a fighter and killer, bold and aggressive. During ministry, the first alter personality that manifested was named "GI Joe." It had been created by this shy young man to take over in combat situations and deal with the stress and pressure of killing the enemy. This man became a bold risk-taker, almost suicidal in combat. Due to his aggressive tactics, several of his co-pilots were killed in gun battles, yet he was never wounded.

This alter empowered the young man to fight ferociously. He drove himself to be a war hero, even if he had to die for his country. None of this aggression matched the

personality of a sweet-natured young country boy, shy and a little overweight when he entered the military.

The result of the presence of the spirit of mind control was the legal right for an influx of demonics attached to murder, hatred, and uncontrollable rage. This entry of demonics also caused a long list of physical and emotional infirmities that tormented this man for many decades.

When the man received ministry, GI Joe left. The man reported his mind calmed, and the "chatter" in his mind was gone. He was able to draw closer to the Lord and experience His presence.

### **3. Young Lady Compensating for Ungodly Beliefs of Rejection Named "Sapphire"**

A lovely but sickly 19-year-old Christian woman came for ministry. From her childhood, her belief was that she was ugly and this caused her to compare herself to every girl she met. Early in her life, she accepted the lie repeated in her mind that she was undesirable. She rejected the Word of the Lord, which declares she is fearfully and wonderfully made. She knew the Word but dismissed it in this area of her life. Instead, she chose to believe she was hopelessly unattractive. Because of listening to this strong lie and failing to take her thoughts captive, she became deceived. This stronghold became an unbearable burden to her. She began to expect to be rejected by men while only wanting to be liked and recognized by others.

The chatter and torment in her mind drove her to seek acceptance, regardless of the cost. She chose not to be obedient to scripture. Knowing she should wait upon the Lord, she instead chose not to seek first the kingdom of Heaven and its righteousness (**Matthew 6:33**). This caused the Lord to give her over to follow her own devices. Her free will surpassed the promises of God in this area, and God backed off as she chose another source.

Without fully understanding the consequences of her disobedience, she pushed to take control of this painful situation. In her disobedience, she created an alter named "Sapphire". The function of this alter was to make the girl become more sexually alluring and attractive to men. However, as soon as she created this alter, the spirit of mind control entered her. This demonic spirit enabled her to disassociate from her normal state and slip into the alter "Sapphire." When she wanted attention from a man, "Sapphire" would come up, and she would begin to act more alluring. Unknown to her, demonic spirits of seduction and perversion entered her when she created this alter. The ordinarily shy, modest, rejected, young woman would become openly flirtatious.

For years, she believed the lies of the enemy, and she created many alters to help her handle situations in her life. For example, the alter personality named "Sassy" was created to use humor to deflect unwanted attention. "Dream Boat" was created to feel pleasure instead of shame during sexual encounters. "Rocket" was created for handling

explosions. "Bestie" was created to handle situations when she was touched sexually and did not want to be. "Crystal" was created to handle rejection. Finally, "Runner" was created to give her the ability to split and run if necessary.

Ultimately, the oppression made her become sexually aggressive toward men. The demonics helped perform the intended function of seduction. She indeed received more attention from men, which had been her initial goal. However, in the process, she became a magnet for men possessed by spirits of perversion. The result was disastrous for her. She became sexually active with men who cared nothing for her. She created many other alters to deal with various sexual encounters and the emotional damage caused by the sexual behaviors she knew to be wrong. She ended up ashamed, broken-hearted, rejected, and physically exhausted. She was almost bedridden from infirmities.

After receiving ministry of healing and deliverance, she was able to think more clearly and reject the enemy's lies. With the alters, the spirit of mind control, and attached demonics gone, she was able to train herself that the original lies of rejection were untrue. Clarity of thought came and she was healed of numerous physical and mental ailments. She accepted herself as God's treasured possession and began to stand on the Word and the promises of God. This caused her to begin to fervently study the Word and acquire renewal of the mind. That means she no longer thought the same. She was able to be patient and wait on the Lord to bring her a godly man and is now happily married to a Christian man who loves her. They are actively involved in their church and now have two children. She is pursuing the Lord especially in worship ministry and is again able to enter the presence of the Lord as she loved to do as a teenager.

### **Ministering to People with Alter Personalities**

When ministering to alter personalities, the ministry leaders need to realize that the alters are not demons. They are the legal right to the demonic but are not the demonic. We do not handle them in anger or aggression because the alters are wounded areas of the individual. They were created by the person to assist, enable, and empower. The alters do not know they are the legal rights to the attached demonics.

If an alter becomes too strong, the person may become schizophrenic. The alter personality takes charge of the individual's life. As demons fight for authority in the core person, they may become bipolar. Two demons can be fighting for authority or superiority in the person's life. This enables them to become the two demonic "heads" of the bipolar disorder. Sometimes it is two heads of witchcraft. For others, it is a witchcraft and pride head (leviathan spirit). In relation to mental infirmity, the ultimate goal of the enemy is insanity. With the release and removal of alters, I have seen many people healed of all mental infirmities: schizophrenia, bipolar disorder, ADHD, manic disorder, dyslexia, confusion, psychotic thoughts, indecision, etc. I have also seen many healings from physical infirmities: cancer, hepatitis-c, all forms of arthritis, diabetes, hearing loss, obesity, addiction, etc. In relation to physical infirmity, the ultimate goal of the enemy is

death. Both physical and mental infirmities steal your call. They rob you of who God created you to be, and steal your promise of abundant life, rest, and peace.

In Christian healing ministry, an alter personality is something a person creates in their mind and emotions to help in times of trauma or difficulty. This is similar to the secular, humanistic definition, but the treatments differ.

Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) was formerly called Multiple Personality Disorder. The approach of modern mental counselors is to reintegrate these alter personalities into the core person. This is how they are trained to handle their patients. Many clients have spent thousands of dollars and years on secular therapy efforts to reintegrate alters but live in unhappiness and distress. Modern day counselors may disagree, but no complete redemption will occur until the Lord gets involved.

Many psychiatrists recommend medication to help weaken the effects of the attached alters and demonics. It is a humanistic approach, which is contrary to Christian teachings on healing and deliverance. As believers serving a healing God, we know you cannot medicate a demon. Only the core person is affected by the medication. They may not experience the many lows as they did previously, but neither can they experience the highs. Medication flatlines their personalities, and they cannot experience deep levels of joy or sorrow. This technique does not “fix” them. Only deliverance and redemption, with renewal of the mind, will bring full healing. Many people have testified that they received more healing and deliverance in several hours of alter ministry than in years of therapy. I have ministered to a tormented lady who psychiatrists told her that she was born with a chemical imbalance. They had prescribed seven different mind-altering medications to get her chemical imbalance figured out. After several hours of alter personality ministry, she unbeknownst to her doctors, got off all seven medications. Some who have come for ministry, have been diagnosed and treated for twenty plus years. Thousands of dollars have been spent while feeling like a guinea pig and not getting any relief.

We do not reintegrate alters but give, release, and lead the alters to the Lord. As the alter accepts Jesus Christ as its Lord and Savior, it causes the core person to become single minded in that area. The individual receiving ministry has already professed Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior, or they would not be receiving Christian ministry. The Word teaches in James 1, that when we are double-minded, we are unstable in all we do. As the Lord removes the alters, the spirit of mind control and all attached demonics no longer have the legal right to remain. The mental and physical healing of the individual can begin. Thus, our ministry is different from secular therapy. We ask the Lord to heal and deliver the person from demonic strongholds established by legal rights from the alters that were created.

The Bible teaches us that humans are weak, especially when they are familiar with a system which they created and has been used for years. This system is always created

based on their own understanding of circumstances, not based on Biblical principles, but it can be a blending with Biblical principles.

**II Peter 2:22 “Of them the proverbs are true: ‘A dog returns to its vomit.’ and, ‘A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.’”**

The problem with reintegration is the first time the person gets into a familiar and difficult situation; they call the alter back to help. When the Lord removes the alter, they are gone and are no longer accessible. A new alter would have to be created to perform the function of the prior removed alter. After teaching about the difficulties of living with alters, the person now has renewal of the mind. They likely will not create a replacement alter personality. Renewal teaches them to rely on Biblical principles and to trust God. With this new mindset, they now know not to create new legal rights to the enemy. The humanistic approach leaves the alters in place, reintegrated, so they are still accessible.

## Names of Alter Personalities

Alters have names, often but not always, related to the function of the alter in the life of the individual. It seems the alter selects its name related to its function and source. During ministry, an alter may identify itself by name. The core person often has no knowledge or memory of such a name.

During ministry, it is necessary to identify the alter personality by its name. This separates it from all other alters and identifies it with a particular function that it was created to do. The information that is needed during ministry: (1) the name of the alter, (2) how old the person was when the alter personality was created, (3) what is the function of the alter and why was it created, and (4) how many other alters helped it perform that function. I record the names of alters because it will help me minister directly and efficiently to the person's needs. The name identifies the contaminated area, which must be exposed in order to become redeemed.

When ministering to individuals with alter personalities, below is an example of the necessary information for each unredeemed area. (See Ministry Procedures for more details)

#1 alter up/”Playboy”/14 years old/created to give John charisma and humor when meeting girls to make him not feel awkward and give him the ability to be bold and attractive to girls/seven alters with “Playboy”

Above is a short summary of required information for alter personality ministry. A detailed version is:

The first alter that came up was ‘Playboy’ that was created when John was 14 years old. It was formed for charisma and humor when John would meet girls to mask his awkwardness and give him ability to be bold and attractive to girls. He had seven

different alters named 'Playboy,' each to deal with a specific and different area of his insecurities.

I ministered to a woman who had an alter which identified itself as "What If ?" The alter caused her to ask the question, "What if ?" and she always assumed she was being rejected and unliked. The alter "helped" her weigh out conversations and people's reactions and she became overly cautious. She was driven to question every situation in which any circumstance changed. For example, if a business luncheon had to be rescheduled, she would be tormented by thoughts of "What if they don't like me?" "What if I am going to be fired?" "What if I will be alone?" These thoughts are examples of an alter that has become so extreme the person becomes socially challenged.

Even as ministers, people can make mistakes. I sat with a pastor one day. He had created an alter personality called the "righteous judge". This helped him to weigh out those who he thought deserved ministry time and those who did not.

If a girl is in physical danger, the alter she forms to handle the battle may have a boy's name. A boy is more robust and can fight more effectively for her core person. This makes her feel more protected.

"Nurse" is an alter created to rush in to take care of everyone else and their needs. This individual feels the need to make sure everyone around her is all right. In the meanwhile, the core person becomes increasingly exhausted even to the point of sacrificing their own abundant life.

Sometimes, an alter's name has no apparent correlation to its function.

An alter named "Trudy" took the shame and trauma of a five-year-old girl who awoke with bloody underpants from being sexually abused during the night. "Laura" was created to cause a lady to laugh through the pain by making fun of herself.

Some alters have names that appear to be more like the name of the attached demonic. They can be called "Rejection", "Hatred", "Control", "Anger", "Manipulation", etc. Each have a function of assisting the core person whenever a situation arises when they would be needed. For example, "Control" can be used to make situations change so the person will not feel uncomfortable. "Anger" can be used to make sure the core person is not vulnerable to dominant personalities and will not be hurt or embarrassed.

## **Long Term Effects of Unredeemed Alters**

As we understand the belief system attached to creating and maintaining alters, it allows us to be compassionate to the people who come for ministry. It helps us to know why they think the way they do. Psychology is the study of how people act and react to life situations. This fascinated me. Before understanding the power of the spirit of mind control, I thought people should just move ahead in their freedom. In other words, "Get over it! Move forward and leave the past behind. Acquire mind renewal. Don't think the same way. That is not who you are anymore." Now I realize that they are unable to move

ahead because the witchcraft spirit of mind control *makes* them think that way. It is a powerful spiritual force that removes their ability of free will thought processes in some areas. They do not have the capacity to process thoughts like people who never created alters or those who have become redeemed.

When these individuals hear the intense voices in their mind and sense the strong persuasion of mind control, they may think this is how the Lord created them. The Word teaches us in **Proverbs 3:5-6** to “Trust in the Lord with all of our heart and lean *not* on our own understanding.” Our own understanding is always based on the natural realm and in our prior circumstances, good or bad.

Alter personality creation is always based on the age and perspective of the person. This could be because of their level of spiritual maturity, family, familiarities, outside influences, etc. We remember being hurt, rejected, or violated and felt the need to be protected. It could be as simple as not getting our way. Remember the flesh and the spirit war with one another (**Galatians 5:16-26**). There is always an opposite reaction between the spirit and the flesh.

The teaching of long-term effects of alter personalities is simple. Understanding it is a form of common sense and logical thinking. If there is a beast or monster in your midst, it will starve if you stop feeding it. It will die of starvation, but if we feed it at random or continually, it will survive and thrive. This is synonymous to unredeemed alters. As we use alters and rely on them, they are being fed, empowered, and reinforced. All attached demonics can maintain their legal right to remain. They invite in other spirits at random to torment the person. The goal of the enemy is to steal, kill, and destroy.

**John 10:10 “The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full.”**

When we use these alters even years later as a form of performance, prevention, protection, or shelter from fears and hurts, we are strengthening their rights to remain. We are empowering them to stay and maintaining the false belief that they are needed.

The problem with unredeemed alters remaining is whatever function they were created to do, they continue doing. The alter is the legal right for attached demonics. The witchcraft spirit of mind control and all demonic spirits continue to cause deeper rooted issues and extensive levels of mental and physical infirmities.

Later in this chapter there is a section named “Victorious Healing Testimonies”. These are shortened versions of some of the testimonies showing the effects of long-term unredeemed alters.

1. A lady who was violated by her father at age 11 hated to hear him breathe in her ear. As she created an alter personality whose function was to stop her from hearing this breathing, she unknowingly invited in the spirit of mind control. This gave her the ability to disassociate. In order to stop hearing the offensive noise, the spirit of deafness was necessary and invited in to perform that function. This system worked well, and it

seemed to fix the problem when it was needed. As she grew older the alter personality and its function was no longer necessary. She began to notice her hearing was deteriorating. The lady could no longer hear the crickets chirping in the evening. This caused her to start watching peoples' mouths when they spoke to compensate for her hearing loss. By the time she called and asked for ministry at 55 years old, she was 85% deaf.

2. Another shortened testimony was that of a 42-year-old man who was losing his ability to walk. When he came for ministry, he used a cane and was very troubled with his physical infirmity. This man was unable to work for three years and could not provide for his family. His wife had taken two jobs to compensate for the salary loss. The doctors had concluded that he would end up in a wheelchair with no ability to use his legs. He was interested in getting a hip replacement, but the doctors told him this would be impossible. There was a blackening of the bone in his hip area that the doctor's called "bone death". It was continually growing, and it erased the possibility of receiving a hip replacement.

When ministry started, he spoke of his experiences as a child. His father played games with him after school: baseball, basketball, and other fun activities. The man spoke of loving his father, looking forward to the quality time together, and enjoying their after-school activities. When the family dinner was finished, his father would begin drinking whiskey on the rocks (straight liquor with ice). Hours later, he would drag his son upstairs or wake him up with fits of rage and violence. He spoke of extreme beatings even when he had done no wrong. As a child, he created an alter personality to deal with the intensive abuse and his father's extreme personality changes.

As he got older, his father passed away. He married a Christian girl and started a family. Becoming a believer in Christ, he learned scriptures about forgiveness and blessing. Doing his best to pray, he forgave and blessed his abusive father. This process of obedience was the beginning of his healing. The alter personality he had created did *not* forgive. The alter within him was still sowing hatred, anger, resentment, and unforgiveness. The design of the alter is to hold and carry the offense. If it forgives, it no longer has a function or purpose. It has no reason to exist. The result of this sowing caused the man to reap the infirmity in his hip. The "bone death" slowly and continually grew because he still listened to the "chatter" of the alter. It reminded him of the abuse and how he did not deserve that treatment. By entertaining the thoughts and not denouncing them, he became double-minded.

There are many stories of unredeemed alters with attached infirmities. They grow deeper and stronger with continued use. The longer an alter personality remains, the deeper rooted the attached demonics become. This causes mental and physical infirmity to increase.

- **Examples of Long-term Unredeemed Alters**

1. 1. If you create an alter personality to prevent you from hearing something unpleasant, the long-term affect will be to experience some degree of hearing loss or complete deafness.
2. If you create an alter personality that gives you the ability to forget something traumatic, there is a possibility that the long-term affect could be forgetting everything. I personally believe that this becomes a legal right to dementia and Alzheimer's disease. The spirit of mind control has been given the purpose and function to mute memories. That is not all it will do. In some cases, you could forget your family, friends, yourself, etc. One sign of this in action is when someone comes for ministry and they have small or large segments of memory loss from their childhood. That is a sign of an alter personality that was created to help them forget traumatic, painful, hurtful, or abusive situations.
3. If you create an alter personality due to believing the lie of rejection when young, in time you could end up obese and consumed with control. Obesity occurs when the alter personality invites in demonics to manipulate weight gain and food absorption. The reasoning behind this is if you are obese, no one will want you, and you will no longer have to deal with rejection. The alter thinks they are helping to fix the pain. The person can diet relentlessly with no results. This is how the alter personality is protecting the person from future rejection. Anytime an alter personality is created, there will always be a spirit of mind control invited in to allow disassociation. This spirit invites additional demonics that cause the individual to want to be in charge of all situations of life. It is another form of self-protection against rejection. This control in time can cause the mental infirmities of OCD, confusion, depression, pursuit of perfection, psychosis, etc. It depends upon which spirit enters with mind control. The physical infirmity of arthritis is usually attached to this spirit of control. Even in the midst of medical injections and extreme medications, the arthritis keeps growing. I have seen many totally healed of arthritis when unredeemed alters are revealed, redeemed, and released to Jesus. It depends upon which spirit enters with mind control.
4. Some may create an alter personality due to the ungodly belief that they are unattractive and undesirable. When they are older, they may be consumed with the spirit of seduction and perversion. They will always be striving to fill that void.
5. Some may create an alter personality based on being the child of an alcoholic or drug addicted parent. The long-term result of this alter will be someone who wants to be in charge of all situations of life. It may give them manipulative and distorted ideas. They could become perfectionists or have issues with anger, anxiety, or OCD. It becomes difficult to interact with them due to their extreme levels of control. They also will lie and manipulate situations to make sure they never again experience the feeling of not being in control of their environment.

The stories go on and on. Whatever alter is created will continue to perform the function it was created for with all attached demonics until the area becomes revealed, redeemed, and released.

## The Lord Does Not Leave Us Hopeless

Some may not know of or be able to receive this type of ministry. There is not a standard procedure for healing and deliverance. When an individual has a difficult childhood and creates alters, they may be able to invalidate the authority of alters through mind renewal. Part of spiritual maturity in dealing with alters is denouncing the lies they speak to your mind. You may hear, "Can you believe what they did to you? You did not deserve to be treated like that." Realize it is not the Lord speaking to your mind. It is also not yourself if you have chosen the Biblical principle to forgive, release, and bless. It is an alter personality with the spirit of mind control and accusation trying to keep its function and right to be there. If you disagree and do not follow through with the thoughts of past reoccurring accusations, you are starving the alter and weakening its function. The individual can acquire freedom without specific alter ministry. Remember, if you do not feed a beast, it will die. The person must study scripture and apply it to their life.

Part of their freedom is to receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. This empowers the individual to overcome and feel conviction. The Holy Spirit will convict and remind of what Jesus said. The empowerment of the Baptism of the Holy Spirit can override the spirit of mind control. The person also needs to get far away from all circumstances that caused the creation of the alters. This is all part of renewal of the mind. They no longer think the same way or need to rely on the alter personalities. We can become transformed and made new with renewal of the mind.

Some people mature spiritually and apply the Scripture **I Corinthians 13:11** by putting childish ways behind them. They learn the gift of repentance of sin, and choose to forgive, bless, and not hold offense. They practice becoming a person of blessing instead of being judgmental, with tendencies of hatred and unforgiveness. They apply the Scripture of **Ephesians 6:12** and learn to have compassion on the ones who mistreated them. This brings the understanding that there is a possibility that the people that hurt them were treated in a similar way. This can invalidate a created alter in time. It loses its function through the process of renewal of the mind. This means that the person would no longer think the same way. They learn to trust God in all aspects of their life and lean not unto their own understanding.

**Romans 12:1-2 "Therefore, I urge you brothers, in view of God's mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God-this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is-his good, pleasing and perfect will."**

These are people who are understanding the ability to overcome through the study of scriptures and are no longer perishing for a lack of knowledge. They learn scripture references and apply them to their own lives such as:

**James 1:5 "If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask of God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him."**

They learn to trust and serve the Lord and put all other idols or any other sources away. These people repent of all sin and the sin of using sources, other than Him, to accomplish an abundant life. They rely on Jesus, the author and perfecter of their faith.

**Hebrews 12:2a “Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith.”**

**Matthew 6:24 “No one can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other.”**

If we learn to hate alter personalities or any source we use other than God, He will deliver us. As Scripture says, He will not deny Himself. (**Timothy 2:13**) The promises of God are yes, and amen through Jesus Christ.

Blessed is the one in whom the Lord reveals, redeems, and releases unredeemed areas of their lives. Some are able to be set free completely by seeking Him.

**Hebrews 11:6 “And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.”**

The body of Christ is a true body of believers with each having its own anointing, gifting, and calling and level of faith. If anyone needs counsel and ministry, it is by no means a sign of weakness. Scripture says it is wise to seek counsel. Receiving Godly counsel is still a way to seek the Lord and be delivered completely.

### **Things to Consider Before Receiving Alter Ministry**

Many people have contacted me for ministry not realizing what is actually involved. Often, they notice a lacking in their relationship with the Lord, are having trouble hearing his voice, or they lack intimacy with the Father. Others call because of sickness (mental and/or physical infirmities). They long to feel better. Their life is not lining up with Scripture of having abundance and peace. Some are tired of the constant chatter they hear in their mind, knowing it is not from the Lord. They realize scripture says Christ came so they can have life more abundantly. They also know the Scripture that God promised them a sound mind. I have seen people who came for ministry who have been diagnosed with a life threatening disease. They came in hopes of redemption and total healing.

When counseling for ministry preparation, I teach scriptural principles of trusting God in all aspects of their lives. People who call themselves ministers, Christian counselors, or Christian therapists need to teach Biblical principles. It is not about our opinions or ideas. As we teach in this manner, the anointing on the Word can break the yoke of people’s bondage so they can understand it. It is like the hymn “I Surrender All”. It is never wise to come for ministry and not allow the Lord to redeem all the areas completely. I have seen many people come for ministry that merely want to feel better. They receive some deliverance and feel that is enough. Every time, they end up worse than before (**Matthew 12:43-45**). When alters are created during a time of crisis, it can become a lifestyle. A person receiving ministry needs to change their technique of

handling awkward and uncomfortable situations. Spiritual law in Scripture can teach us how to think differently to seek deeper forms of renewal of the mind and receive deeper forms of restoration. It washes us. And when we are washed, it takes away the dirt and we become clean.

I have to let them know that the system they have created of relying on alters must stop. It is a natural and fleshly desire to be in control of our own outcome. They must realize and repent for the sin of creating idols and sources other than the Lord. He is a jealous God and wants all aspects of our life given to Him – good and bad. He wants to share life with us and longs for that. He is a relational God and desires to be intimately involved in our lives.

**James 4:5 “Or do you think Scripture says without reason that the Spirit He caused to live in us envies intensely?”**

I remember a worship song that stated, “He won’t relent until He has it all.” He desires to not only be our sustainer, but our redeemer as well. He is our healer, deliverer, provider, protector, counselor, and Savior. The punishment that brought us peace was put upon Christ at the cross.

**Isaiah 53:5 “But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities, the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed.”**

He has paid the price with his life for our uncomfortable areas-our troubled places that we do not know how to handle. We are called to fully release and trust Him with all our difficulties. If you are not willing to trust the Lord fully, forgive, release, bless those who have hurt or offended you, you will never be fully healed. As adults with some spiritual knowledge, they should be equipped to handle the situations that resulted in the creation of the alter. When we are young, there is usually no Biblical method to prevent alter personality creation. Many times it’s the only method known in dealing with traumatic circumstances. When releasing all alter personalities to Jesus, we are being obedient to this Scripture.

**I Corinthians 13:11 “When I was a child, I talked like a child, I thought like a child, I reasoned like a child. When I became a man, I put childish ways behind me.”**

To put this into perspective, if you are taking a walk down the street and a little child grabs your hand, walks with you, and starts counseling you in life, you would think this was cute. This does not mean you would receive life counsel from the child. Another child could come and take your other hand and begin to counsel you. You would again think this was cute, but acknowledge that you would not take counsel from a child. Another scenario would be that you have twelve children walking with you. This is how your life would be if you had many alter personalities. It would be the chatter of many alters speaking to your mind. Living with alters is like these scenarios. The chatter and

type of counsel is based on the perspective and the age of the child when the alter was created.

When someone receives ministry and all alters have been revealed, redeemed, and released to Jesus, they find themselves walking down the road alone. They no longer have the alters to help with decisions or uncomfortable situations. Some feel lonely after receiving ministry because they no longer have these invisible helpers and friends. This is what Scripture means when it says that our inner house has been swept clean and empty. When alter personalities and attached demonics are removed, it is now the time to start filling these places. We filled them with the things of God, and not self-protection or fear. We study Scripture, we create a prayer life, and we seek worship and relational intimacy with the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. We walk in repentance and seek to know Him more. **II Chronicles 7:14-15** This is the time to reach out your hand and fully trust the One who has been there all along. He has waited for you to give Him all the difficulties in your life. His promise is that He will never leave or forsake you (**Deuteronomy 31:6**). Alter ministry needs to be done thoroughly and completely. Scripture says to trust Him with every aspect of our life. The point of receiving ministry is to deal with it all – do not hold any of it back thinking you will need it in the future. If this is the thought process, you are *already deceived* and are saying to the Lord, I do not trust You in all areas of my life. You still want to be in control. When you hold onto the bondage, you denounce the scripture that says whomever the Son sets free becomes free indeed (**John 8:36**). What He does He is able to do completely.

**II Corinthians 1:20a** “For no matter how many promises God has made, they are yes in Christ.”

**Jeremiah 17:14** “Heal me, O Lord, and I will be healed; save me and I will be saved, for you are the one I praise.”

Leave all the parts and devices behind! Every alter that is kept allows the spirit of mind control to remain. Mind control is the legal right for other unclean spirits to enter. **Matthew 12:43-45** testifies that when deliverance occurs, if the person is not prepared for full freedom, the removed spirits later re-enter and the final condition of that person is worse than when they began ministry.

**Matthew 12:43-45** “When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the house I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first.”

## Why Do People Come for Ministry?

There are many reasons why people seek deliverance. Some contact us because they have grown spiritually stagnant and can no longer hear the voice of the Lord. They know others are enjoying the presence of the Lord, and they want to participate. They know Jesus said He came to give us abundant life. Yet, they wonder why His promise does not seem to work for them.

People often contact me when they are dying of cancer or other fatal diseases. Patients with mental illness are referred to me. Some have been in secular counseling for years, with few results.

Some people come because they are physically and mentally exhausted. Their bodies are breaking down through infirmities. Autoimmune diseases, such as lupus, fibromyalgia, leaky gut, or other conditions, can torment them. These diseases often go back to alters formed by failure to trust God.

**Isaiah 30:15** “This is what the Sovereign Lord, the Holy One of Israel, says: ‘In repentance and rest is your salvation, in quietness and trust is your strength, but you would have none of it.’”

Some people complain of the "chatter" of voices in their heads. Many alters continually chatter to the core person in remembrance, accusation, or unforgiveness. You may hear in your mind “Can you believe what they did to you?” “You did not deserve to be treated that way.” Alters are always trying to justify their rights to remain. They desire to be reassured that they are needed and carrying out the function they were created to do. Thus, the core person cannot "**Be still, and know that I am God**" (Psalm 46:10a). People know if they are unable to rest in who God is.

**II Timothy 1:7 NKJV** “For God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind.”

Some people come as a form of fellowship and teaching. They know from the Bible that Jesus did deliverance but have no idea what that means. Many times, they find out that they are in need of deliverance and had no idea of the need.

## Victorious Healing Testimonies

### 1. Dying Woman Healed

A 34-year-old lady came for ministry and had lived in poverty her entire life. She was diagnosed with Hepatitis C. Not having financial means or time to wait, she was not likely to receive a replacement liver which would prolong her life. She had two young children at home. Her family members sexually abused her when she was very young. She was so severely abused by age four that the family took her to the doctor because they feared for her well-being. She would not stop bleeding. When the doctor examined

her, she was immediately removed from her family because of the sexual abuse. She was placed in the foster care system. She was sexually abused in six of the nine foster homes she lived in during the next decade.

By the age of 14, she had developed into a beautiful woman who hated and despised men. She decided to use men to get what she needed since men had so terribly abused her during her childhood. She ran away from her last foster home she had been placed in and became homeless. From her perspective, the only means of providing for herself was to become a prostitute at age 14. Because she was so young, rules and laws would not allow her to go into the local bar. Instead, she hung out behind the bar, where men came to do drugs and have sex with her. In this lifestyle, she formed many alters to help her perform sexually and survive. She started using drugs and sharing needles with a group behind the bar and became a heroin addict. She contracted Hepatitis C.

Some years later, when she came to me for ministry, she weighed more than 300 pounds. She had numerous knots on her scalp. She had six razor cuts on her wrists and arms because, in desperation, she had slashed her wrists to attempt suicide. She had sought ministry from a Bible study group of women, where she accepted Jesus Christ as her Lord and Savior. Despite everything, she had a strong drive to live. She wanted to go home and be a Godly mother to her children and break the cycles of destructive behavior in her life and her family line. She had many alter personalities attached to constant and repeated abuse, prostitution, physical, mental, and sexual abuse from an early age. Also, many alter personalities had become attached to areas of rejection, fear and drug use.

During ministry, I read Isaiah 45 to her. I taught her how the Lord feels about us and how He feels about us judging one another. She began to repent of the sin of judging and hating men. As we ministered, the alter personalities and the spirit of mind control began to leave. The spirit of satan within her yelled out using her voice, "She's mine! The price has been paid, and she is mine." That unclean spirit seemed shocked she was repenting so profoundly that it was losing its hold on her. I continued to speak the Word to her. She had read all necessary prayers to break all legal rights to the enemy over her life. This included the prayer to release and remove alter personalities to Jesus and prayers to remove all attached demonics.

When the alters left, the spirit of satan and mind control weakened and finally left with the alter personalities. The glory of the Lord filled the room. His presence was so strong we could not stand in His glory. I took anointing oil, crawled over to her, and anointed her with oil in the Name of the Lord. I felt waves of healing power come into my head, chest, and out of my arms and into her. I prayed for her for several minutes with my eyes closed. When I opened my eyes, I saw her sprinkled with gold dust. I asked the Lord, "What are You doing?" The Lord spoke to me, "She is my treasured possession" and He healed her. The following day, she went to the hospital and had a blood test for Hepatitis C, which came back negative. The hospital staff knew her and thought the machine must be broken. A technician inspected the machine, and found it to be operating properly. The hospital administered three more tests, each of which produced

a negative result for Hepatitis C. At the end of the fourth negative test result, they told her, "Go home. You have been healed."

**Ephesians 6:12 "For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms."**

With freedom, she aligns her thoughts with the Word, and the favor of God comes upon her. She blesses her enemies with no judgment.

**Luke 6:27-28 "But I tell you who hear me: Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you."**

## **2. Middle-aged Christian Man was Dramatically Healed**

A mature Christian man came for ministry. He was only 42 years old but had been partially disabled for three years. He was extremely bothered by the inability to provide for his family. His wife had taken on two jobs to compensate for his salary loss. He walked with extreme difficulty and pain using a cane because one hip joint was deteriorating. A hip replacement was needed, but his doctor was unsure if it could be done successfully because of the joint area's increasing "bone death." The doctor predicted he would eventually be crippled and wheelchair-bound. As we started ministry, all necessary prayers were used to break legal rights to the enemy. While sharing his background, he assured me that forgiveness had been granted to his deceased, alcoholic, abusive father. When I began to teach and minister, I asked him to speak out his forgiveness of his father and to release and bless him. After following through with this spiritual process, the formed alter personality was stirred. When the man looked up at me, I recognized an alter personality full of hate, anger, and unforgiveness. His expression had changed. The alter said, "I am the one who took the beatings. How would you like to have dealt with that?" This alter was created when he was nine years old and suffering nightly beatings from a raging, alcoholic father. As a young boy coming home from school, his father would meet him with joy. They would play catch and throw the ball for the dog. After dinner, the father would start drinking straight whisky with ice. He became intoxicated and would beat the boy every evening, sometimes to the point where his legs would bleed. As I taught on the spiritual law of release and forgiveness of his dad, I mentioned that his father had more than likely experienced the same treatment. He had never thought of that. He always assumed that his father was a perpetrator and not a victim. This was part of his judgement to his father. This teaching gave him compassion towards his dad for the first time. We normally have a tendency to perceive that people who hurt us are perpetrators. They plan to hurt and defile us. For the first time, this man had compassion for his father, realizing that he could have been a victim as well.

The man had read the prayer to release and remove alters. During ministry, the man had a vision of Jesus coming into the room of his childhood. Jesus greeted the little nine-year-old alter personality. Jesus gave the little boy a wonderful, shiny, red fire

truck. The little boy's eyes lit up with joy. Jesus smiled and tickled him and picked him up into His arms. Together, Jesus and the little boy-alter personality walked out the door. Jesus closed the door, and they were gone. When I asked the man how he felt, he said, "I don't know." Suddenly, he stood up and started running around the room on a hard tile floor, in stiff dress shoes. He ran like a high school boy. He was rejoicing in the Lord. He returned to the hospital later that day and insisted on another x-ray to verify his healing. The new x-ray showed a normal, healthy hip joint. When the alter personality left, the man was able to stop judging his father. He was healed, restored, and soon returned to a full-time job and was able to provide for his family once again. This was his heart's desire.

A quick teaching attached to this testimony is we need to realize that an alter personality has never been recognized. It has never been acknowledged or told it was doing a good job. It has never experienced touch or play like we would know. When Jesus shows love to these alter personalities, it makes them realize what love is. It shows them that the person will be all right when the alters leave because of the love that Jesus has for them.

### **3. Weight Loss and Renewal of the Mind Occurs**

This is a story about a lady who struggled with weight issues her entire life. She was born the smallest of five siblings, and at the age of two, she needed to have her tonsils removed. After the surgery, an alter personality was created due to her temporary inability to eat. This caused an insatiable desire to overcompensate for fear of a lack of food. The girl had no understanding of why she was driven to overeat. As this mindset continued throughout her life, it caused her to progressively gain weight. This process continued all the way through grade school, high school and college. Being teased and tormented with ridicule and mockery by her peers, this greatly affected her self-image. It also caused her to deal with severe issues involving rejection and shame.

She had been a Christian since childhood and was a baptized, faithful and seasoned believer. Knowing something was wrong, she came for deliverance ministry, and it totally changed her life. As ministry began, she read all prayers associated with breaking legal rights to the enemy. She repented of the sin of her fear of not having enough to eat. This lady forgave, released, and blessed the people who had teased and mistreated her during childhood and early life. Because the alter personality and the spirit of mind control associated with the fear of lack of food was removed, it caused her to no longer crave sugar and high-calorie foods. She started an exercise program to help with her weight loss. After deliverance and renewal, in time she lost 110 pounds.

The Lord showed her that He was her rock, provider, healer and deliverer. During this process, it gave her a heart to minister to others. She opened her home and made it available for deliverance teachings and meetings. Also, she was able to travel with deliverance ministry teams which was such a blessing to her.

### **4. Deaf Woman Was Healed Instantly**

A lady who came for ministry experienced sexual abuse from her father when she was a child. Her mother took her to church, and she accepted Christ as her Lord and

Savior. However, routinely each Saturday, her mother left the girl at home with her father while she visited with another family member and did the grocery shopping. During these two-to-three-hour absences, the father began to molest the young girl. This molestation continued for years. As a result, she grew to loathe her father and felt no trust for men or her heavenly Father. To the minor child, the most offensive thing was hearing him breathe in her ear while he was molesting her.

She created an alter personality to prevent her from hearing his heavy breathing. With this alter creation came the spirit of mind control for disassociation while being molested. The spirit of deafness was needed to prevent her from hearing the breathing. By the time she was eleven years old, he had fully penetrated her. On the first of such occasions, her sheets were red with blood from the rape. He forced her to wash and dry the bed sheets and remake the bed as if nothing had happened. She grew increasingly angry toward him and judged him more and more intensely. Though she was saved, the alter she had created subconsciously continued to make her believe she had the right to judge and hate him for what he had done to her. The alter personality always reminded her of the offense. As a Christian adult, she knew scripture required her to forgive, release, and bless everyone, including her now deceased father. However, the alter did not forgive, release, or bless, and therefore the woman suffered the consequences of unforgiveness for many years. What she hated the most would not leave her. She was still sowing hatred, unforgiveness and judgement through the alter personality. By the time she came for ministry, she was 55 years old and 85% deaf. During ministry, she prayed all necessary prayers to release legal rights to the enemy. She also forgave her father and repented for the sin of judgment, hatred, and unforgiveness toward him. This enabled her to release all attached alters and for the Lord to remove them.

She had a vision of Jesus coming to the little girl who had bloodstains on her dress. When Jesus touched her, all the bloodstains disappeared, and the child's dress became pure white. In the vision, Jesus held the little girl's hand, and they walked away together. When the alters and demonics, including the spirit of mind control and the spirit of deafness left, the lady could completely forgive her father and feel some compassion for him for the first time. She was instantly healed of deafness and was initially shocked at the volume of my voice. Because her hearing was completely restored, she thought I was shouting and asked me if I was angry with her.

### **5. Woman Delivered from Sexual Alter**

A 45-year-old woman came for ministry, along with a group of ladies who wanted to learn about deliverance ministry. Often, people will say they want to learn about the legal rights to the enemy and how to minister to others. She never considered the possibility of having alter personalities herself. Her attitude was like many others, "This is just the way I am. God has made me this way." As a young teenager, she had consensual sex with her father's youngest brother. This uncle was not much older than she was. She was a shy, innocent teenager. When this somewhat older, handsome man paid attention to her and subtly flirted with her, she was flattered. Unknowingly, an alter personality of seduction was created which was triggered by this man wanting to be

sexual with her. The alter personality was used to handle any sexual awkwardness, fears, or guilt. Later, she would barely remember anything about the sexual encounters. This woman matured, got married, and 25 years later came with a group of friends for a refreshing in the Lord. After reading all prayers attached to breaking legal rights to the enemy, we started ministry. The Lord revealed an alter personality. This exposed an unredeemed area in her life. She was very surprised. What had happened in her young teenage years was revealed. She prayed to release and remove the alter to Jesus, and this specific area became redeemed. Later, I received a letter from this woman thanking me for the ministry. For the first time in her 25-year marriage, she was able to be truly intimate with her husband. She was pleased and excited. Before, sex had been a performance by an alter personality, but no longer. The intimacy with her husband had become warm and rich. Her inner healing was tremendous.

## **6. Woman Healed From Mental Torment**

A lady came for ministry who stated she was depressed since childhood, but no one knew how to help her. Her family thought she was just overly sensitive. As she grew older, the depression became even more intense. By the eighth grade, she was depressed and suicidal. Through high school and college, her family, in their attempts to help, sent her to see a psychiatrist and psychologist. They only prescribed an ever-increasing concoction of medication, which never improved her symptoms. After having multiple misdiagnoses, the girl was told she would be on a cocktail of medicine the rest of her life. As she headed into adulthood, marriage, and the birth of a child, the depression, anxiety, and panic continued. Family and friends began to grow impatient with the excessive amount of medication and lack of improvement in her well-being. She was taking 7 different medications and with no positive results. After years of counseling, professionals never established what the root of the depression was. She was told it was merely a chemical imbalance.

Fast forward to around the age of 40. She was still on medication, continually depressed, and was traumatized due to the fear that this would never end. She began to have flash-backs of memories involving trauma and abuse from her childhood. The woman was so desperate for God's help.

After reading through all necessary prayers to break legal rights to the enemy, she began alter personality ministry. After only a few sessions, the root of the trauma she had suffered in her life was revealed! The memories she had flashes of were all real, and the Lord gently and slowly revealed the hidden trauma and abuse. The alters came forth and were released to Jesus. She testified of the relief received after each session. With the removal of the spirit of mind control, her mind was free. She has been off all medication for almost ten years now. There is no more depression, anxiety, or panic. When she deals with negative emotions, she can now identify and bring them to the Lord. Through renewal of the mind, she no longer has to carry burdens or handle them through alter personalities. With spirits of mind control removed, she now casts her cares onto the Lord, as scripture teaches. Whom the Son sets free is free indeed!

The following is a short excerpt from her testimony about the post-ministry process of renewal.

“I would love to say that all was perfect after the alter ministry and my heart was totally healed. This was not the case. While the alter ministry was absolutely vital to my freedom, it didn’t heal my heart completely. The Lord had to come in and do that work. The inner healing of my heart and the renewal of my mind came from a hunger and desperation to have ALL that God said I could have in His Word. I knew His Word said that He was good and that His Promises are yes and amen. He came so that I could have abundant life, and I was not going to settle for anything less. While I no longer dealt with the same issues as before, I was still searching for the wholeness and healing in my heart. There is a process of filling the places that have been swept clean and emptied from deliverance. These areas need to be filled with the things of God, not past experiences and memories. Daily I sought out the Lord for what He said about me as His child. The past had not given me my true identity. I was ready for the Truth about who God created me to be. Daily praying, reading the Bible, and listening to sermons on YouTube, I worshipped and cried out to know Him more. I wanted to be full of Him, healed, and whole. Before the alter personality ministry, I was NEVER fully able to fellowship, hear, or comfortably seek Him. That’s why deliverance and alter ministry was such a vital part of my freedom because once the legal rights to the enemy were gone, I was able to seek the Lord and FIND HIM.

### **7. Woman Healed from Satanic Ritual Abuse**

The following is a testimony directly from my friend. This is the lady who is in the recorded deliverance testimony at the end of the document entitled “Prayer Ministry of Identifying and Releasing Alters to Jesus” which can be found on my website, [www.boblucyministries.org](http://www.boblucyministries.org), under the tab entitled “About the Ministry”. Follow the prompts “Identifying and Releasing Alters”. This document was created by me and my friend and fellow minister, Mark Virkler, at the completion of this lady’s deliverance ministry.

“When I came for ministry, I was middle-aged, distressed, and Bob could tell there were deep levels of oppression and bondage.

When seeking the Lord, I knew something wasn’t right because of having great difficulty in trying to worship at church. Also, there were problems associated with communion, prayer, saying the name of Jesus, and reading the Bible. If I did read the Bible, I would be attacked with controversial thoughts. It was not a comfort to me, as it was for others. In church I would get slain by an unholy spirit. People would think I was having a wonderful spiritual experience, but I was not. We later found I was being triggered by Biblical teachings and spiritual words such as Jesus, the blood, the cross, etc. In this process, a spirit of slumber would cause me to fall asleep. After leaving church confused and distraught, it would take several days to recover. I did try deliverance, but it did not seem to help. It only provided some temporary relief for only a few days or sometimes a few hours. As the distress and torment returned, this made me feel like a failure. I was rejected by other ministers because they were unable to help me. Bob

explained that it was a good possibility that these spiritual hindrances were triggers from my childhood.

I had two repressed memories from my childhood. One was of a counterfeit baptism where I was held under water for a long time. This was a near drowning experience, only to then be revived by those who were “baptizing” me. The other repressed memory involved being sodomized in some form of a ritual. I remember being in a room with many adult men. I was medicated and placed on a table at the front of this room. They sodomized me as the others watched. As an adult, I did have body memories of this event and some physical issues that made me wonder if this was more than a dream. My mother was mentally ill which caused excessive abuse of every kind at her hand. Also, my father was a high-ranking Masonic lodge member.

I sought relief from two Christian counselors. The first tried deliverance, but it wasn't helping. The second counselor told me I had personalities holding the pain from my childhood that were not in agreement with me trusting the Lord. She said I had to get to know these personalities and all their memories. In the process of this, I was intensely tormented, to the point of fearing I would need medication. She also told me that I needed to bring these personalities to the Lord. This caused severe trauma of reliving the memories. I was devastated and begin to have suicidal thoughts. Her method would take 5-20 years and cost \$10,000-50,000 a year. This torment was making it difficult to be a functional person carrying on with life's requirements. I was getting heavy attacks from the enemy on my life, so I was planning to give up on Christianity.

My dear friend, mentor, and spiritual father, Mark Virkler, introduced me to Bob Lucy. We made arrangements to meet by phone for ministry. Bob's technique made deliverance so easy and quick in comparison to prior methods. Bob shared what he had learned about alter personalities, the spirit of mind control, triggers, and legal rights to the enemy. He shared the theology that you can resist the devil all you want so that he will flee, but if he has a legal right to be there, he will not leave. We took time going through the prayers on Bob's web site to break these legal rights. We prepared the environment for ministry by repenting of all sin known and unknown. He claimed all of our homes as holy ground. He bound and broke the power of the spirit of mind control, and called its function null and void in Jesus' name. He broke the power of all trigger words that were spoken over my life, and invited in the warring and ministering angels of the Lord. He asked for the full armor of God, each piece in place. He took a wall of the blood of Jesus and separated alter personalities from attached demonics. It brought me immediate comfort. I can't emphasize how effective it is to have an alter prayer for releasing alter personalities and a demon prayer for releasing attached demonics. The Lord was so kind to give me a vision of the hurt children being invited by Jesus into His garden. There were also other children playing there and all were safe in His loving hands.

During deliverance, it felt as though I got divorced from satan and remarried to Jesus in the same day. Afterwards there was initially a wonderful honeymoon period. Then I had to settle down to living life and dealing with problems without dissociating. I had to learn to use the Lord as my source. It was difficult finding myself in the position of trusting God and not relying on the assistance of alter

personalities. This was the beginning of my renewal of the mind. I now had to fill the empty places in me from my deliverance. Satan did get in my face and want me back. I had to resist the devil with the Lord's help and my mentor's support. There was nothing left to do but to go hard after God. I learned to use the weapons the Lord had given me to resist the lies of the enemy. I learned through renewal of the mind to stand in the authority of the sovereign God and not in my own self. I have needed lots of training and support. My choice is to leave self-pity behind and experience Him through intense prayer. I have to keep my eyes on the Lord and my mind renewed. Learning to come into the fullness of the Lord's promises is rewarding. After years of self-protection, I am choosing to trust in Jesus. Renewal of the mind is a continual process. It teaches me to put down my flesh and all its fears. I am now learning the ways of the Lord, the requirements of God and experiencing His favor. I am learning through fellowship how others believe and seek the Lord. It has been hard work but worth all effort to know and trust Him more. I am experiencing higher levels of peace and victory since my deliverance. The Lord has given me a heart for flag worship, and it is my love language with my Savior. I design, teach, and worship with flags and have been blessed to do overseas ministry with them. Rather than passing out in church, I am using a flag to proclaim territory for the kingdom.

After deliverance there were areas that needed healing. Bob taught me that according to Matthew 12:43-45, there were places in me that had been swept clean and emptied. These places needed to be filled with the things of the Lord, not with my own experiences or understanding, but with scripture, worship, intercession for others, and flag ministry. I am so thankful for Bob Lucy and his Biblical prayers. They helped me so much.

Now 11 years after deliverance, I feel more levels of freedom, and am living a normal life. I am successful in my job and rewarded for being a good employee and am thankful to be healthy and prosperous with a clear mind."

I could go on and on sharing healing testimonies that have been seen when alter personalities become revealed, redeemed, and released to Jesus.

**PLEASE NOTE:** These three prayers are intended to be used when you receive alter personality ministry from Bob Lucy Ministries or another experienced Christian minister. It is not intended to be prayed by you alone in advance of your ministry appointment. If these prayers are used before a ministry session, the anointing will stir up alter personalities. This could bring them forth and create unnecessary distress.

These prayers will be used during your actual ministry appointment, when there are other Christians praying for you in a safe and secure environment. They are for ministry purposes only. If you have questions about the meaning or purpose of these prayers in relation to alter personality ministry, please contact Bob Lucy.

## Prayers

### 1. Prayer to Release Alters

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus, I \_\_\_\_\_, pray forgiveness for the sin of creating alters. There have been times in my life when I suffered from the lack of knowledge. I now realize these alters have been trying to do Your job in my life, which would be to comfort, protect, and counsel me.

I repent for the sin of failing to cast my cares on Jesus, as the Word says to do. I repent for the sin of creating alters, which are idols that say, "I can handle my own problems."

So, I speak to all alters I have created, and I say to them: "Thank you for the job that you have done. You were there when I needed you. I now release you from me and from your function. I say you will leave me and go to be with Jesus." I now choose to trust Jesus in these areas where the alters have been functioning and in all areas of my life. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondages, enslaving thought patterns, familiarities, and dependencies to these alters in the Name of Jesus.

I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deuteronomy 28:13**) to have Jesus and the Holy Spirit come and fill all places within me where alters are.

I forgive, release, and bless anyone who has caused me to create alters. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people, and I expect the alters to do the same thing and align with my will. I ask these things in the mighty Name of Jesus. Amen.

### 2. Prayer to Remove Alters

Heavenly Father, in the name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_, come before You, and speak as the head and not the tail, and I say that all alters I have created will become redeemed by the blood of the Lamb, just as I have.

These alters will accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior, just as I have. I repent of the sin of creating alters and failing to cast my cares on Jesus, as the Word says. So I say now that these alters, (name them) \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, and all remaining spoken and unspoken alters, will release all their rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, to my will, and to my emotions. And I ask You, Lord Jesus, to come and take these alters away with You, to a place where there is no fear, abuse, rejection, lies, or performance, and they leave with You now. Thank You, Jesus.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

### 3. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of Satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan;  
 all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;  
 all heads of python with all python eggs;  
 all Indian heads of witchcraft;  
 all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;  
 all heads of rejection;  
 all heads of fear;  
 all heads of perversion;  
 all heads of idolatry;  
 all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;  
 and, all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## Chapter Nine: Refinement and Renewal of the Mind

### Testimony

“Going around the mountain”

Sometimes, patterns of sin resemble “going around the mountain.”

A) We find ourselves in repeated sin patterns. This is usually a weakness in our flesh and an area we chose not to totally surrender to God. This sin can be long-term and familiar. We relish in this sin, even though God sees it as rebellion. It needs to stop, but the sin habit has become comfortable, vital and deserved, carrying it on as long as possible even thinking God does not see us in the sin. It even has become a valid part of a system we have created. This system has some God in it, some Scripture in it, yet we are still being comfortable with familiar sin in it as well. Then things start happening in our life.

B) Areas that once seemed peaceful and simple become troubled. This may be in the form of a loss of peace, relational issues, or financial or physical problems. This refinement from the Lord can go from mild disturbances to chaos depending on the level of the Lord’s discipline. The hedge of protection over our lives is diminished due to the unredeemed sin.

C) As the discipline and refinement of the Lord comes into our life, it causes conviction of the sin. Until the sin is acknowledged and repented for, the discipline will continue. By now, we are over half way around the mountain. As we acknowledge our sin and repent, the conviction of the Holy Spirit has performed His function. The Holy Spirit is the part of God who convicts us of sin and reminds us of scripture.

D) As the Lord restores us through acknowledgement of sin and repentance, we have come full circle around the mountain. This sounds like a great accomplishment of overcoming. The problem is this, we end up exactly where we were when we started. This trip “around the mountain” can take weeks, months, or years and leaves the individually physically, mentally, and spiritually exhausted. As we receive the discipline and refinement of the Lord, it stops the trips around the mountain. To those who do not receive the discipline and refinement, they continue to go around the mountain again and again until acknowledgement of sin occurs. The wise person learns from this pattern and chooses not to repeat it.

For example, when a relationship fails, we find ourselves back where we started. Things are not going well. We realize the presence and the favor of God have departed. We feel ashamed, we repent, and we ask the Lord to help us with our problems. We start getting close to God again. We find ourselves where we started. We have a choice: we can ascend the mountain toward God’s Presence or we can go around the mountain again by repeating the sin habits.

A lady called Mary came to me for ministry. Mary had accepted Jesus Christ as her Lord and Savior. However, she was not living a joyful and abundant life. She complained that she kept making the same bad decisions in her relationships with men. She had two failed marriages and many failed relationships. She would seek a relationship with a new man, and “go around the mountain.” She would enjoy the initial excitement, but soon experience guilt, shame, rejection, and failure. She unwittingly sought and found the same type of man over and over. When the abusive relationship ended, Mary would find herself back in the same place she was before she began the latest destructive behavior.

As Mary persisted in this exhausting pattern, things got worse in her life.

Mary confessed that she felt exhausted, empty, and far away from God. She also told me about various financial disasters, accidents, infirmities, and continuing difficulties she was experiencing.

In this process of refinement, God was testing Mary by removing favor from her life.

**Deuteronomy 8:2 “Remember how the Lord your God led you all the way in the desert these forty years, to humble you and to test you in order to know what was in your heart, whether or not you would keep his commands.”**

**Jeremiah 12:3(a) “Yet You know me, O Lord; You see me and test my thoughts about You.”**

Mary received deliverance from lust, seduction, rejection, addiction, and other demonic influences. She repented for her pursuit of perversion and all idolatries attached. Mary released all alter personalities to Jesus and recognized that she had been using these sinful relationships as a source other than God. She repented of seeking comfort and security from sinful practices. She repented of the sin of trusting in man and depending on flesh for her strength instead of trusting in God.

**Jeremiah 17:5-8 “This is what the Lord says: ‘Cursed is the one who trusts in man, who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit.’”**

Mary recognized her pattern and was able to repent of the sin of this repeated lifestyle. Mary chose to seek God and began to set her mind on the things of God. She began to read the Bible and pray daily and began to seek the Lord in every area of her life. With this new lifestyle, she was filling the places in her life that had been swept clean and emptied from deliverance.

Over time, Mary realized the Lord was empowering her to avoid sin and stop “going around the mountain.” She began to seek God alone for the desires of her heart. As she concentrated on this new lifestyle, the process of renewal of the mind was taking place. She no longer thought the same way. The Lord restored favor to her. She resisted the lusts of the flesh, and the Lord enabled her to live a more abundant, fulfilled, and joyful life.

The Lord desires to bring us out of sin habits and carnal behavior. To escape sin, we must determine to pursue the promises of God. Follow His patterns, trust in Him, and be obedient to His Word. As Christians we are called to seek Him first over all other sources in our lives.

**Matthew 6:33 “But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things will be given to you as well.”**

If we do not allow the Lord to test, teach and refine and deliver us from sin, we will sink into deeper carnal behavior. Some even sink into deep levels of depravity with a continual lust for more sin. The fruit of this action is we become like non-believers and are blinded to the things of God.

**II Corinthians 4:4 “The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.”**

**II Peter 2:22 “Of them the proverbs are true: ‘A dog returns to its vomit,’ and, ‘A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.’”**

We have to realize that in order for the working in our lives to become complete, there must be refinement from God. If He didn’t refine and discipline us, we would stay the same, and even get deeper into sin. The first thing that God deals with us usually, is self-consumption. He perceives our self-consumption as iniquity, and disciplines us out of that mindset first. When God spoke with Noah of His regret of creating mankind, He said that man always had evil thoughts and they were about themselves. God refines us out of self-consumption and brings us into a place where we are able to serve and bless others.

## Disobeying God’s Word

A man named Robert testified to me about what the Lord did in his life. The man knew the Biblical principle of tithing. See **Malachi 3**. However, he decided he could not afford to tithe. He heard a sermon about the blessings that accompany tithing, including God’s promise to rebuke the devourer for our sakes yet continued to refuse to tithe. His excuse was that the pastor giving the sermon on tithing was trying to get more money for himself and the church.

Robert believed he could not pay his bills if he paid ten percent of his income to the church. He firmly believed that *he* had gotten the job, pulled his own time working, and

received the income on *his* own. The Lord began the refinement process. His motor vehicle broke down repeatedly. Home repairs accumulated. He refused to acknowledge God as his source to produce wealth.

**Deuteronomy 8:18** “But remember the Lord your God, for it is he who gives you the ability to produce wealth, and so confirms his covenant, which he swore to your forefathers, as it is today.”

He soon became unable to meet his monthly bills. Had the Lord not disciplined and refined Robert in this area, he would not have been able to move forward in his spiritual growth. Through refinement and renewal, he would learn to trust God as the one that sustains and provides for him. He would no longer remain disobedient in this area and “perish for a lack of knowledge”.

Robert repented before the Lord for his disobedience. He began to tithe, paying ten percent of his income to his church and other valid ministries. His finances began to improve. He was able to pay his bills with ninety percent of his income. His vehicle and equipment lasted longer, and the Lord’s favor became apparent in all his financial dealings. The Lord was rebuking the devourer for his sake.

The process of refinement taught Robert. He realized God does not need his money. God was testing Robert to see if he would trust God’s Word and look to Him as his Provider. Robert now understands that the Lord is able to sustain him and his belongings based on favor and obedience. It caused renewal of the mind in this area.

**Deuteronomy 29:5** “During the forty years that I led you through the desert, your clothes did not wear out, nor did the sandals on your feet.”

## Definition of Refinement

Refinement is the Lord’s approach and method to transform the natural person with their fleshly desires into a thoroughly equipped servant of the Lord. The process of refinement is the discipline of the Lord to call a person into whom God has designed them to be.

Although “the spirit is willing but the flesh is weak” (see **Matthew 26:41** and **Mark 14:38**), we are called to overcome our fleshly desires and become servants of the Most High God. This is a continual process of overcoming the flesh, which is why Jesus taught us to take up our cross daily and follow Him (**Luke 9:23**).

People are born self-absorbed and consumed with their own desires. People often think too highly of themselves and their opinions.

**Isaiah 5:21** “Woe to those who are wise in their own eyes and clever in their own sight.”

We are all created with certain tendencies that require the refinement of the Lord.

**Romans 11:32** “For God has bound all men over to disobedience so he may have mercy on them all.”

**Romans 8:20-21** “For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the one who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God.”

Without salvation, teaching, refinement, and renewal, we remain in this pattern of repeated sin, “going around the mountain”, and having loss of favor. We also lose God’s hedge of protection over many aspects of our life.

**Isaiah 59:2** “But your iniquities have separated you from your God; your sins have hidden His face from you, so that He will not hear.”

**II Chronicles 7:14-15** “If my people who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land. Now my eyes will be opened and my ears attentive to the prayers offered in this place.”

**Psalms 51:5-6** “Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. Surely You desire truth in the inner parts; You teach me wisdom in the inmost place.”

- **Purpose of Refinement**

God’s process of refinement is initiated by God because of our pride, rebellion, apathy, fleshly nature, and all forms of disobedience to God’s Word. These sins are catalysts for refinement. Also, the Lord is faithful to complete the work He has begun in us.

**Philippians 1:6** “being confident of this, that He who began a good work in you will carry it on to completion until the day of Christ Jesus.”

We know what he has called us to do is irrevocable and does not change (**Romans 11:29**). Refinement is necessary to get our fleshly desires and goals out of the way. This enables us to become what He has created us to be: our part in the Body of Christ, our giftings, and our call.

God will apply the process of refinement to all people, saved and unsaved, in order to draw us unto Him.

**Hebrews 12:1-11** “Therefore, since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses, let us throw off everything that hinders and the sin that so easily entangles, and let us run with perseverance the race marked out for us. Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the cross,

scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. Consider Him who endured such opposition from sinful men, so that you will not grow weary and lose heart. In your struggle against sin, you have not yet resisted to the point of shedding your blood. And you have forgotten that word of encouragement that addresses you as sons: *‘My son, do not make light of the Lord’s discipline, and do not lose heart when He rebukes you, because the Lord disciplines those He loves, and He punishes everyone He accepts as a son.’ Endure hardship as discipline; God is treating you as sons. For what son is not disciplined by his father? If you are not disciplined (and everyone undergoes discipline), then you are illegitimate children and not true sons.* Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us and we respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live! Our fathers disciplined us for a little while as they thought best; but God disciplines us for our good, that we may share in His holiness. No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it.”

II Samuel 14:14(b) “But God does not take away life; instead, He devises ways so that a banished person may not remain estranged from Him.”

Jeremiah 9:7 “Therefore this is what the LORD Almighty says: ‘See, I will refine and test them, for what else can I do because of the sin of my people?’”

Malachi 3:2-3 “But who can endure the day of his coming? Who can stand when he appears? For he will be like a refiner’s fire or a launderer’s soap. He will sit as a refiner and purifier of silver; he will purify the Levites and refine them like gold and silver. Then the LORD will have men who will bring offerings in righteousness.”

- Refiner’s Fire

The image of the Refiner’s fire refers to the process of refining the ore of a precious metal, such as gold or silver. Extremely high temperatures are necessary for this process. For example, gold melts at 1,948 degrees Fahrenheit. As the ore melts in the heat, the “dross” or impurities contained in the ore are released and float to the top, where they can be removed by the Refiner. What remains is pure gold.

If the dross is not being released, the Refiner will increase the heat. When the metal is purified and the dross removed, the Refiner can look into the surface of the heated liquid metal and see His own reflection. This is what the Lord wants in His relationships with us. Refinement from God is the same way. If we are tired of sensing a lack of favor and purpose, it is time to submit to the will and call of the Lord. This action of submission and obedience causes the refinement in this area to stop.

The Lord does not use literal fire, but “heats” our lives with trials of many kinds.

He uses refinement to test us to know if we love Him with all of our heart, soul, mind and strength. See **Mark 12:30**, and **Luke 10:27**. See also **Deuteronomy 6:5**.

**James 1:2-4** “Consider it pure joy, my brothers, whenever you face trials of many kinds, because you know that the testing of your faith develops perseverance.

**Perseverance must finish its work so that you may be mature and complete, not lacking anything.”**

Refinement is necessary for a person to become an instrument of the Lord. God uses refinement to make the individual into the person He has created him to be. It is our choice as to whether we will recognize or ignore this refinement. We are called to seek the Lord. Many go through a lifetime of refinement and do not recognize the work and prompting of the Lord, which would reveal to us how to overcome the contaminated areas of ungodly beliefs, thoughts, and actions that are causing the refinement.

**2 Timothy 2:20-21 “In a large house there are articles not only of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay; some are for noble purposes and some for ignoble. If a man cleanses himself from the latter, he will be an instrument for noble purposes, made holy, useful to the Master and prepared to do any good work.”**

The wood and clay referenced in the above verse represent areas where we have not allowed the refiner’s fire to change us. Gold and silver have been through the refiner’s fire, wood and clay have not. That is why the scripture says if we cleanse ourselves from the latter (wood and clay), we are made holy and useful to do any good work. When a Christian submits to the Lord’s refinement, there will come a time when refinement in that area is no longer necessary. The Lord will continue His good work in us by revealing deeper areas that need refinement.

This process becomes easier as we recognize what the Lord is doing to us and for us. Refinement is for our own good. It is based on preparation for our call and the empowerment to overcome.

When we are faithful with a little, He will entrust us with more. This is His way. That does not change.

**Matthew 25:23 “His master replied, ‘Well done, good and faithful servant! You have been faithful with a few things; I will put you in charge of many things. Come and share your master’s happiness!’”**

Refinement must happen if we are to become like Christ. Remember the refinement comes until the refiner sees his image or likeness in the melted metal. He is calling us to be His servant and to be Christ-like. Christ did not come to be served, but to serve. See **Matthew 20:27** and **Mark 10:45**.

The Lord’s refinement process can be directed to an individual or to an entire nation or people group.

In Amos, God tells the people of Israel what He has done to refine the entire nation.

**Amos 4:6-12 “I gave you empty stomachs in every city and lack of bread in every town, yet you have not returned to me,’ declares the LORD. ‘I also withheld rain from you when the harvest was still three months away. I sent rain on one town, but withheld it**

from another. One field had rain; another had none and dried up. People staggered from town to town for water but did not get enough to drink, yet you have not returned to Me,' declares the LORD. 'Many times I struck your gardens and vineyards, I struck them with blight and mildew. Locusts devoured your fig and olive trees, yet you have not returned to Me,' declares the LORD. 'I sent plagues among you as I did to Egypt. I killed your young men with the sword, along with your captured horses. I filled your nostrils with the stench of your camps, yet you have not returned to me,' declares the LORD. 'I overthrew some of you as I overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. You were like a burning stick snatched from the fire, yet you have not returned to me,' declares the LORD. 'Therefore this is what I will do to you, Israel, and because I will do this to you, prepare to meet your God, O Israel.'"

## Renewal of the Mind

Renewal of the mind requires us to determine to change our way of thinking. We must make ourselves seek Him, trust Him, and use a conscious effort to think in a new way, not as the way we thought before but as the vessels He has refined and molded us to be. Through the process of renewal, He has empowered us with weapons to move forward in our calling and enable us to overcome.

**II Corinthians 10:3-5** "For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ."

As we long for more of the Lord, we see past our immediate circumstances. We begin to rejoice in the goodness of the Lord and refuse to think in old carnal ways. The Lord brings renewal of the mind. We begin to think differently. He has already given us all authority to overcome and perform the function of our call. Renewal of the mind gives us the ability to apply that authority.

**Luke 10:17-19** "The seventy-two returned with joy and said, 'Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name'. He replied, 'I saw satan fall like lighting from heaven. I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you.'"

**Proverbs 3:5-6** "Trust in the LORD with all your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge Him, and He will make your paths straight."

The reason this scripture tells us to not rely on our own understanding, is that this is the area where our past hurts, fears, and troubles are located. This is the pre-renewal area of our understanding and thought processes. We have moved past that through refinement.

**Romans 12:1-2** "Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God's mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God — this is your spiritual act of

worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is — His good, pleasing and perfect will.”

- **What Prevents Renewal of the Mind?**

Personal sin, rebellion against God's ways, and fleshly desires prevents the renewal of the mind. When a person remains mired in personal sin, he should ask the Lord to reveal the sins and convict him of those sins. He must specifically repent of those sins and run from them. If his choice is to avoid acknowledgement and repentance of sin, he is heading right back into refinement.

**Matthew 3:8 “Produce fruit in keeping with repentance.”**

When a person allows the flesh, the carnal nature, to remain in charge, he prevents renewal of his mind. By insisting to remain in sin and pursuing deeper levels of sin, we can be given over to deeper levels of oppression. The end result is depravity — doing what ought not to be done with a continual lust for more (see **Romans 1:18-32**).

**Galatians 5:19-21 “The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery; idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.”**

**II Timothy 3:1-5 “But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boastful, proud, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God — having a form of godliness but denying its power. Have nothing to do with them.”**

Each Christian needs to say, “No” to his own carnal nature, and crucify the flesh. This is why Christ taught that if we are to follow Him, we must deny ourselves — our worldly passions, fears, insecurities, and ungodly beliefs.

**Luke 9:23 “Then He (Jesus) said to them all: ‘If anyone would come after Me, he must deny himself and take up his cross daily and follow Me.’”**

To remain a friend of the world is to be an enemy of God.

**James 4:4 “You adulterous people, don't you know that friendship with the world is hatred toward God? Anyone who chooses to be a friend of the world becomes an enemy of God.”**

**Romans 8:5-8 “Those who live according to the sinful nature have their minds set on what that nature desires; but those who live in accordance with the Spirit have their minds set on what the Spirit desires. The mind of sinful man is death, but the mind**

**controlled by the Spirit is life and peace; the sinful mind is hostile to God. It does not submit to God's law, nor can it do so. Those controlled by the sinful nature cannot please God."**

As we pursue this sinful nature, we are allowing our flesh to control us. This grieves our spirit and the Lord. Realizing the spirit and the flesh war with each other, we have the ability to put the flesh tendencies down. This allows our spirit to be in charge and is a sign of renewal of the mind.

**Galatians 5:17 "For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want."**

As we pursue renewal of the mind, we are called to train ourselves to distinguish good from evil. Until we get this thought process ingrained into our mindset, we are instructed to use this system constantly.

**Hebrews 5:11-14 "We have much to say about this, but it is hard to explain because you are slow to learn. In fact, though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you the elementary truths of God's word all over again. You need milk, not solid food! Anyone who lives on milk, being still an infant, is not acquainted with the teaching about righteousness. But solid food is for the mature, who by constant use have trained themselves to distinguish good from evil."**

### **Lukewarm Christians**

**Revelation 3:14-20 "To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God's creation. I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! So, because you are lukewarm — neither hot nor cold — I am about to spit you out of my mouth. You say, 'I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.' But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked. I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined in the fire, so you can become rich; and white clothes to wear, so you can cover your shameful nakedness; and salve to put on your eyes, so you can see. Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent. Here I am! I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in and eat with him, and he with Me."**

It is not wise to be a lukewarm Christian who does not hear the Lord knocking at the door of your heart. Just because you have accepted Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior years ago when you were young, it does not mean all is well. He has an expectation of us to seek Him, to draw near to Him, to learn His ways, and crave to know Him more. Many will fall away in the last days because they have acquired no depth in their relationship with Him.

**Matthew 7:21-23 "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say to me on that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name and in your**

**name, and in your name drive out demons and perform many miracles?" Then I will tell them plainly, 'I never knew you. Away from me, you evildoers!'"**

The King James Version of the Bible uses the words, "Get behind me you worker of iniquity." Years ago when I was studying Scripture to learn about legal rights the enemy acquires to steal from us, I asked the Lord what His definition was of the word iniquity. I told Him I would not go to Webster's Dictionary, and I would not Google the word looking for the answer. It had to come from Him. I immediately heard the words from Him that His definition of iniquity was self-consumption.

God offers a variety of powerful experiences with Him. Learn to hear His voice. When you have questions, ask the Lord and wait upon Him for answers.

The Lord is eager to have a relationship with you. He longs to empower us with his Spirit. Through this baptism of His Holy Spirit, our eyes become open so we see and feel conviction for sin. This makes us hunger to know Him more and allows Him to dwell in us (see Prayer to Receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit). This process of obedience and submission offers a lifetime of joy, provision, instruction, and fulfillment.

Baptism of the Holy Spirit enables us to receive more of the Lord. It empowers us and gives us the ability to overcome sin and troubled areas in our lives. There is always warfare in us overcoming because the enemy wants to steal our reward. **Revelation 2:7,11,17,26-28; 3:5-6,12-13,21-22** These Scriptures give us seven promises to those who overcome. I encourage you to study these verses, look them up, mark them in your Bible, and know the promises of your reward in overcoming.

**Isaiah 30:18 "Yet the Lord longs to be gracious to you; He rises to show you compassion. For the Lord is a God of justice. Blessed are all who wait for Him!"**

He offers to change our lives through refinement and the renewal of our minds. He takes the carnal desires away and the things that hinder us. In this process of renewal, He shows us how shallow our self-fulfilling thoughts are and gives us opportunities to grow and learn in Him. To some, this teaching is hard to understand. Scripture gives us an answer for all things.

**James 1:5 "If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him."**

**Jeremiah 33:3 "Call to Me and I will answer you and tell you great and unsearchable things you do not know."**

## **God Has Called Us to Become the Elect**

The goal of renewal is to become a Christian who will not be deceived. As we mature in Him, we realize that all Scripture is God-breathed. All Scripture is Christ. We are called to saturate ourselves with Scripture so that in the last days, we will not become deceived and fall away. Anything that does not align with the spiritual law of Scripture is not of God.

In the latter days, the Elect of God will not be deceived because they know the Word of God and refuse to believe false messiahs, false prophets, or false doctrines.

**Matthew 24:22-24** “If those days had not been cut short, no one would survive, but for the sake of the elect those days will be shortened. At that time if anyone says to you, ‘Look, here is the Christ!’ or, ‘There he is!’ do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect – if that were possible.”

**II Corinthians 13:5** “Examine yourselves to see whether you are in the faith; test yourselves. Do you not realize that Christ Jesus is in you — unless, of course, you fail the test?”

- **Methods to Promote Refinement and Renewal of the Mind; Ensure Old Sin Habits do not Return:**
  - Read the Bible daily. Saturate yourself in God’s Word. This empowers you with Christ, himself.
  - Meditate and ponder the truth of God’s Word. Use it as a mighty weapon to demolish strongholds in your life.
  - Talk to the Lord daily. Ask, seek, and find.
  - Replace ungodly beliefs with the truth of God’s Word.
  - Learn to confess Scripture aloud, especially Scriptures applicable to one’s current struggles. As you learn Scripture, you are able to use them when needed. Quote them aloud.
  - Repent of sin often. Keep a short account of sin before the Lord.
  - Forgive others. Pray for those who have mistreated you, and bless them.
  - Pray for the needs of others and also bless them.
  - Regularly attend a Bible-believing Church and be physically present. Scripture tells us not to give up on meeting together.
  - Establish new friendships with Christians. As we share with like-minded people, the Bible relates that to iron sharpening iron.
  - Rebuke the devil. All authority has been given to us for this process.
  - Fast. Don’t allow the flesh to be in charge.
  - Tithe. This is the only Biblical challenge where God asks us to test Him to see Him reveal Himself as our provider and sustainer.
  - Turn off your television, radio, internet media, and other sources of carnal material. Spend time seeking Him and invest in learning His ways and requirements.
  - Minister healing and deliverance to oneself or seek ministry from a mature Christian. Allow the anointing of Christ to teach you in areas where you need help.

## Prayers

### 1. Prayer to Release and Remove Ungodly Thought Processes, Mindsets, Devices, Defense Mechanisms, and Wrong or Unbiblical Reactions

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_ ask You to forgive me for the sin of failing to cast my cares upon You because I did not know how to cast my cares upon You. There have been times in my life when I suffered from a lack of knowledge of knowing how to handle life's situations, difficulties, decisions, traumas, and not casting my cares upon Jesus as Your Word says to do. I confess I have used ungodly thought processes, mindsets, devices, defense mechanisms, and wrong or unbiblical reactions. I confess that I sought to handle and control my own problems in my own ways. I devised methods and systems for my self-preservation. Now, I choose to ask You, Lord, to gather and remove the devices I have created and used to get through life's difficult circumstances. I repent for the control I used in creating these devices instead of trusting in You. I release all control, anger, revenge, unforgiveness, and judgments, and all altered states of mind into which I entered to handle trauma in my life. I relinquish my self-preservation, and I trust You for my life and choices.

I release to You all trauma, known and unknown. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondage, enslaving thought patterns, and dependencies in the name of Jesus Christ. I now purpose in my heart not to reenter these altered states of mind, devices, and mindsets that I have become accustomed to using.

I pray in the name of Jesus that You give me the renewal of mind to recognize these devices when they reappear due to life's circumstances. I release to You all disappointment, bitterness, and resentment about my past. I choose to renew my mind through the ongoing study of Your Word. I choose Your truth instead of altered states of mind that have caused me to revisit painful feelings or paralyze and distort my response to abuse or other behavior patterns toward me.

So, I speak to all altered states of mind, ungodly thought processes, mindsets, defense mechanisms, devices, and conditioned reactions. I command all such devices to align themselves with the Word of God and release their power over me, my mind, my emotions, my personality, and align with my will in the name of Jesus Christ. I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deut. 28:13**) to have Jesus Christ and Your Holy Spirit come into me and restore my soul. I forgive, release, and bless everyone who has hurt, abused, or misled me. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people. I ask You to bless them and give them what they need. Please bring me into a place where I am fully restored and made whole in spirit, soul, and body. I ask You to renew my mind so that I will not return to these old ways of thinking.

I thank You for teaching me to take captive every thought to make it obedient to Jesus Christ (**2 Corinthians 10:5**). I ask You to give me the renewed ability to maintain this fresh way of thinking for my new godly lifestyle.

According to James 1, I can ask You, Lord, for wisdom, and You will give generously to all without finding fault. I ask that You give me the wisdom to maintain godly thought processes in this new season of my life and not return to the old, ungodly thought processes.

I desire that all of me be able to worship You in spirit and truth (**John 4:23-24**). I desire to worship You with a sound mind, undivided heart, and clarity. I thank You and ask these things in the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

*If you feel you need deliverance ministry in this specific area, please read this prayer and apply it to what you have learned in this chapter:*

## 2. Prayer to Remove Demonics

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

- all attached heads of the spirit of satan;
- all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;
- all heads of python with all python eggs;
- all Indian heads of witchcraft;
- all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;
- all heads of rejection;
- all heads of fear;
- all heads of perversion;
- all heads of idolatry;
- all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs;
- and,
- all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## Chapter Ten: Preparing Your Environment and Reclaiming Your Territory

### Introduction

This teaching on preparing your environment and reclaiming your territory is relevant and greatly needed for Christian believers. It is needed not only for ministry purposes but for life itself. Many of us know about the promises of God but do not know how to activate them in our lives. Preparing the environment is also needed for peace in our homes. There is a biblical principle that we are to experience peace in our lives. The knowledge of God's ways through obedience with thanksgiving brings us the promised ability to acquire peace.

**Isaiah 53:5** "But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed."

**Isaiah 48:17-18** "This is what the Lord says-your Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel: 'I am the Lord your God, who teaches you what is best for you, who directs you in the way you should go. If only you had paid attention to my commands your peace would have been like a river, your righteousness like the waves of the sea.'"

**Philippians 4:4-7** "Rejoice in the Lord always. I will say it again: Rejoice! Let your gentleness be evident to all. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus."

Scripture teaches us valuable lessons which give us the ability to acquire the abundant life that Christ came for us to have.

**John 10:10** "The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life, and have it to the full."

The King James Version phrases it as "abundant life".

As we ponder scripture and apply them to our life, we are able to put together ways and thoughts that align with God's way so life will go well with us.

**Deuteronomy 5:29** "Oh, that their hearts would be inclined to fear me and to keep all my commands always, so that it might go well with them and their children forever!"

All scripture is written for us as an example and teaching of other people's experiences.

**1 Corinthians 10:11** "These things happened to them as examples and were written down as warnings for us on whom the fulfillment of the ages has come."

We have the ability to create a system of reward and favor based on obedience. We also have the ability to create a system avoiding the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God. Some use as an excuse that they have a lack of knowledge in this area, but this system lacks peace, fulfillment, and abundance due to disobedience. We are not created to follow our own way but instead to follow His way. Our way utilizes sources other than that of God to satisfy our flesh, fears, and self-protection.

**Hosea 4:6 “My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.’”**

King James Version uses the word “perish” for the word destroyed. Perish means to die.

We have the ability and the gift of free will to choose our own destiny to follow His way or go our own way.

**Deuteronomy 30:19 “This day I call heaven and earth as witnesses against you that I have set before you life and death, blessings and curses. Now choose life, so that you and your children may live.”**

Scripture reminds us that God boasted to satan about his servant Job. He told satan that there was none like him on earth. He spoke of Job as being blameless and upright. He was a man who feared God and shunned evil. (**Job 1:6-11**) Job created a covenant with his own eyes, not to look at a woman with lust. (**Job 31:1**) Satan’s response was that God had formed a hedge of protection around him, his household, and everything he had.

The desire I have in sharing this teaching is to share my experiences in life and ministry. People who are hungry to know him more can experience God putting a hedge around them, their household, and everything they own just as He did for Job. What matters is if we are willing to surrender our created systems and replace them with His ways and requirements. Remember, Job made a choice to fear God and shun evil. This obedience caused God to notice his surrender of flesh, and therefore rewarded him with protection and favor. This action caused satan to notice Job’s favor and protection, as well. People in Job’s community also noticed.

Some people in the Body of Christ have experienced the freedom and abundance of a prepared environment in their past. They know that obedience is the key to maintaining this freedom yet they are no longer experiencing the benefit of abundant life or that hedge of protection. These individuals need to reclaim their territory and the promises of God. This means they need to boldly speak out that they will not allow the enemy to possess and dwell in their territory. They also need to recognize what legal rights the enemy has to steal what is rightfully theirs. It may be apathy, religious doctrine, or a lack of repentance. There is always a legal right for satan to steal from us.

## Testimony

I enjoy using testimonies as a witness to God's faithfulness in each chapter. We all know that we are able to overcome the works of the devil by the blood of the lamb and word of our testimony. (**Revelation 12:11**) Through the years, I heard a story of a young, godly, married couple who had bought their first home. In their excitement of being first-time home owners, they were able to apply biblical principles and scriptures for preparing their living environment. Together they created a plan of sanctifying their new home for the presence of the Lord, the Holy One. They insisted on keeping their new house sanctified and holy for the Spirit of God to abide and dwell in their new surroundings. They dedicated the house to the Lord and to Kingdom business and purposes.

**Deuteronomy 20:5** "The officers shall say to the army: 'Has anyone built a new house and not dedicated it? Let him go home, or he may die in battle and someone else may dedicate it.'"

In their prayer time, they remembered to sanctify the property and house by:

- (1) repenting of any sin that had ever occurred there. Being owners of the property gave them this authority. As they repented of their own sin,
- (2) they were able to boldly claim their new surroundings as holy ground, and
- (3) called the function of the enemy null and void in Jesus' mighty name. This meant they were able to start enjoying their newly acquired surroundings. A valuable part of this environment preparation was to
- (4) invite warring and ministering angels to dwell among them for warfare and worship. In the hunger this young couple had to please God and enjoy His presence, they committed to one another
- (5) to have worship music playing quietly in the home continually. They also
- (6) invited the Holy Spirit to dwell with them in this prepared environment. Following Biblical principles, they committed to one another to
- (7) never bring a "detestable thing" into their home. This included television for entertainment.

**Deuteronomy 7:26** "Do not bring a detestable thing into your house or you, like it, will be set apart for destruction. Utterly, abhor and detest it for it is set apart for destruction."

(8) During their prayer time, they always remembered to ask for the full armor for each other, each piece in place.

After several years of enjoying their new home, some renovations were needed. The living room needed painting and removal of the old carpets. Their goal was to refinish the floor back to the original hard wood. As they emptied the room in preparation for the intended work, they removed the old carpet. In doing this, the young couple found a satanic pentagram painted on the floor in the middle of the living room. They were dismayed and realized their home had more than likely been used for satanic meetings and worship. Because of their faithfulness in preparing the environment of this home, the prior sin which happened in this home had no influence on them at all. The power of

sanctifying and dedicating their home was stronger than the power of the sin which had occurred there. They simply sanded the pentagram off of the floor and had it refinished. They were able to enjoy each other and the Lord's presence as if nothing demonic or evil had happened in the home. When the enemy comes in like a flood, the Lord has raised up a standard-the power in His Blood.

## Our Three Environments Which Need to be Dedicated and Sanctified

The scenarios of our environments can be endless. Work, travel, the grocery store- all aspects of life. This teaching is about the three most used environments in life. These three environments to prepare or reclaim are (1) ourselves: our innermost being, (2) our physical house: where we live, and (3) our place of ministry.

Before I get into specific teachings on the three environments, I would like to go over a foundation of scripture that allows this to happen. It is a Biblical principle that explains God's way (**Luke 16:10**). When we are faithful over a little, He will entrust us with more. We are called to abide in Him (**John 15:1-17**). This is a wonderful teaching on abiding and remaining in Him. **Psalm 91:1-16** is another promise of His faithfulness and goodness due to resting and abiding in Him and being obedient. I did not write out both of these scriptures but would encourage you to read and study both in detail. This will help you build your faith if you struggle with doubt and unbelief or if you are young in the faith. Just so it will be spoken, it is the power of the name and the blood of Jesus that accomplishes all of this. Remember, in **Matthew 21:23**, Jesus taught that some people who move in power and authority are not believers. This is when he said "Get behind me, you worker of iniquity" (self-indulgence). "I never knew you." How precious to our Creator to bless His people due to their obedience and using our God-given authority. As believers in Jesus Christ, this is our spiritual inheritance.

## Learning How To Use Our God-given Authority

What does it mean to prepare your environment, and how is it done? How do we reclaim our territory and forcibly take it back from the enemy? To prepare the environment for living in peace, inner peace, and the heaviest anointing during ministry, we speak to mountains with the authority Jesus gave us.

**Luke 10:19** "I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you."

The word "mountain" can be described as a hindrance. Anything that causes us to not experience God's presence and favor, is a hindrance. Mental chatter is a hindrance. Ongoing sin and unredeemed areas in our lives are hindrances. As the Bible teaches, we speak to mountains, and the mountains move. We are called to ponder and notice, "What are the mountains and hindrances in our lives?"

**Mark 11:22-24** "Have faith in God," Jesus answered. "I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, 'Go, throw yourself into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart,

**but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him. Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask for in prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours.”**

We are able to accomplish this wonderful task through repentance. This book is full of scriptures on the teaching of the value of repentance. In my opinion, if we ask in Jesus' name for Him to move mightily on our behalf without repentance, it is an attitude of entitlement. This attitude indicates we believe we are able to move in His power through prophecy, healing, deliverance, or whatever the task may be, in our own righteousness and not His. Through repentance we acknowledge He is the one who removes transgressions. There is no other source for removal of our sin. Certain religions have created a theology that says He has taken all our sins away: past, present and future. So why do we need to continually repent? Scripture tells us God does take away our sin (**Colossians 2:13-14**), yet Jesus teaches us to produce fruit in keeping with repentance.

Repentance of our daily sin and short-comings of His Glory is the easiest spiritual mandate that is required of us. It seems some haven't been taught the value of walking in this mighty weapon of repentance. Get rid of the pride and religion, humble yourself and repent (**II Chronicles 7:14-15**).

If we are going to take the kingdom by force, claim our territory as holy ground, heal the sick, and cast out demons, it is wise to walk in repentance. It is easy.

**Romans 3:23, “For all have sinned and fall short of the Glory of God.”**

The Word says the righteous take the Kingdom by force (**Matthew 11:12**). Also, scripture teaches the prayer of a righteous person availeth much (**James 5:14-16**). When scripture speaks of our righteousness, it is based on repentance in Christ, not our own righteousness. When we repent of our sin, we share in the righteousness of Christ. We share in his work at the cross of redemption and His pure and holy blood shed for the remission of our sin.

**Ephesians 2:8 “For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith-and this not from yourselves, it is a gift of God-not by works, so that no one can boast.”**

Our own righteousness is like filthy rages to the Holy One (**Isaiah 64:6**).

Here are a few quick scriptures from the Old and New Testament, which is all Christ-He was the Word from the beginning. This will show us the importance of asking the Lord to forgive our sin, known and unknown of that day. This keeps a short account of sin between us and Him.

**Habakkuk 1:13 “His eyes are too pure to look upon evil.”**

Repentance causes our Heavenly Father to turn toward us. He sees us through the shed blood of Jesus Christ, which is His Son, the Savior of the world.

**II Chronicles 7:14-15** “If my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land. Now my eyes will be opened and my ears attentive to the prayers offered in this place.”

When this scripture instructs His people to humble themselves, He is commanding them to repent of their sin. As we dissect this scripture, we realize the first verse makes two references to people who believe in Him and acknowledge Him as God. Scripture says “If *my* people, who are called by *my* name”. Most people who are hungry for God and spiritual growth know that our land needs to be healed. It has become filthy with sin. Why would we believe repentance is not a regular practice? When we do not repent, we are not acknowledging our shortcomings and “turning from our wicked ways”. We are not being obedient to scripture and humbling ourselves through repentance which means He will not heal the land. Notice that the second half of this Scripture teaches us a portion of the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God. After we repent and turn from our wicked ways, He says, “Then my eyes will be opened and my ears will be attentive to the prayers offered in this place.” This means that He says He will look upon us and hear our prayers after repentance.

Two scriptures in Jeremiah proclaim when we do not repent, it is the same as saying to God that we have no sin (**Jeremiah 2:35 and Jeremiah 8:6**).

**Isaiah 59:2** “But your iniquities have separated you from God; your sins have hidden his face from you, so that he will not hear.”

**Isaiah 30:15a** “This is what the Sovereign Lord, the Holy One of Israel says: ‘In repentance and rest is your salvation, in quietness and trust is your strength.’”

**Matthew 3:8-10** “Produce fruit in keeping with repentance. And do not think you can say to yourselves, ‘We have Abraham as our father.’ I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The ax is already at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.”

**Mark 1:15** “‘The time has come’, he said. ‘The kingdom of God is near. Repent and believe the good news!’”

**Matthew 4:17** “From that time on Jesus began to preach, ‘Repent for the kingdom of heaven is near.’”

**Luke 5:32** “I have not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.”

All repentance acknowledges that he is the one that can and will take our sin away. Acknowledging Him as Lord through repentance is our obligation as believers. All we need to do is ask.

As we realize we are called to walk in repentance, it does not mean we grovel, mourn, and feel unworthy. Move past all of that. We are worthy to receive His grace and forgiveness. If we were found unworthy to receive it, He would not give it to us. Seek

God, walk in repentance and in His authority. It is easy. This gives us the ability to boldly come before Him, use the mighty weapons He has given us, then we are able to speak to mountains and the mountains move.

As Christian believers who are seeking more of the Lord, we are called to get sin out of our lives. The Holy Spirit is the one who convicts us of sin and reminds us of what Jesus said. As we repent of our sin, we should consider repenting of the idolatries attached to the sin. It is often an area of contamination that is attached to our flesh. Do not let your flesh be in charge.

**Galatians 5:17** “For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want.”

Our example in scripture is to fear God and shun evil. Part of inner preparation is examining yourself.

**II Corinthians 13:5** “Examine yourselves to see whether you are in the faith; test yourselves, Do you not realize that Christ Jesus is in you-unless, of course, you fail the test?”

Don't tell the Lord how much you are suffering and trying to overcome the flesh. By doing this, you are stating your flesh is in charge. Follow Biblical principles.

**James 5:16** “Therefore, confess your sins to each other and pray for each other so that you may be healed. The prayer of a righteous man is powerful and effective.”

We are commanded to resist the desires of our flesh.

**Matthew 16:24** “Then Jesus said to his disciples, ‘If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow me.’”

Denying oneself means we have learned how to hate the sin and we are no longer a slave to it. Then we are able to completely overcome. There is always warfare attached to overcoming because the enemy wants to steal the reward. In Revelation there are seven rewards to those who overcome. When the temptation of sin returns, we are able to remember we have learned to hate it, and it does not hold us as a slave any longer. Paul wrote he would not be a slave to or mastered by anything (**I Corinthians 6:12**). Following this pattern of obedience can cause believers to move in the power of God. This is how they speak to mountains and the mountains move.

## Religion

Sometimes religion is a hindrance for God's power to move. It may be a doctrine based on what people have seen or not seen before. Also, all denominations have theology and doctrines created by their founding fathers. Some are Biblical, and some are not. I encourage everyone to study, know and apply scripture, not religious doctrine. Most denominations carry some religious doctrine that does not line up specifically with the

Word of God. As we acquire knowledge of scripture, this causes us to be His elect which are people who are not easily deceived.

**Matthew 24:24** “For false christs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and miracles to deceive even the elect-if that were possible.”

**Isaiah 29:13** “The Lord says: “These people come near to me with their mouth and honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. Their worship of me is made up only of rules taught by men.” This is also referenced in **Matthew 15:8-9**.

**Amos 5:21-24** “I hate, I despise your religious feasts; I cannot stand your assemblies. Even though you bring me burnt offerings and grain offerings, I will not accept them. Though you bring me choice fellowship offerings, I will have no regard for them. Away with the noise of your songs! I will not listen to the music of your harps. But let justice roll on like a river, righteousness like a never-failing stream.”

This teaching on religion and rules taught by men is not intended to discourage people from going to church. The Word testifies we are not to give up meeting together (**Hebrews 10:25**). Find a biblical-based church with an anointed pastor and teacher. Study to show yourself approved.

**II Timothy 2:15** “Do your best to present yourself to God as one approved, a workman who does not need to be ashamed and who correctly handles the word of truth.”

**Matthew 7:7-8** “Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened.”

## Three Environments We Are Called to Prepare and Redeem

### 1. Our inner being

God created us in His likeness. He is a three part being: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. He also created us as a three part being: spirit, soul, and body.

**I Thessalonians 5:23-24** “May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. The one who calls you is faithful and he will do it.”

Scripture teaches us about three individual yet separate parts of God’s wonderful creation, which is His design in His likeness.

Jesus was discussing miraculous signs with the Pharisees and the teachers of the law. They had proclaimed to Jesus that they wanted to see a miraculous sign. Instead of showing a sign, Jesus started to teach them about deliverance.

**Matthew 12: 43-45** “When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the *house* I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first. That is how it will be with this wicked generation.”

Jesus taught when a spirit (demon) left a person, it said I will return to the house I left. This tells us that somewhere in this tri-part being is a house. My personal thoughts on where this house is located is in our soul. This is the area where hurts, disappointments, abuse, rejection, and other legal rights to the enemy reside, including any alter personalities. As we learn more about this scripture, we realize the house in us needs to be recognized and maintained. It needs to be cleaned and dedicated to the Lord. All broken areas need to be revealed, redeemed, and released to the Lord. Any home needs to be cleaned and maintained and not ignored. This can be a thought process which is new to us. We have the ability through free-will to totally ignore this area and just assume the house in us is fine. We can reject this teaching because we have never heard it taught in church. Remember, what Christ spoke in scripture is spiritual law. Some teachers may avoid this subject due to a lack of knowledge in this area. Some churches teach that a Christian cannot have a demon. In my experience as a deliverance minister, this is absolutely not true. We are called to receive all scripture as sound doctrine. We do not have the ability to pick and choose to agree with what lines up with our theology or belief system we have created to feel comfortable.

Scripture teaches the righteous to take the kingdom by force (Matthew 11:12). I encourage all believers to prepare this inner house within us for the presence of God so His Holy Spirit will be in this place – not demons who come and go as they please. I also encourage each and every one in the inheritance of Christ to reclaim this territory. Pursue it as though it has been stolen from you. Why? Because it *has* been stolen from you. It does not belong to the enemy. It belongs to God. He has paid for that residence with His precious blood and its tenant is a squatter. This tenant has occupancy rights due to unredeemed areas of our life. Reclaim your territory which we have allowed the enemy to abide in and steal. The teaching is simple: “You can resist the devil all you want so he will flee, but if he has a right to be there, he will not leave”.

In the process of preparing your environment and reclaiming your territory, this scripture is relevant.

**Deuteronomy 7:26** “Do not bring a detestable thing into your house or you, like it, will be set apart for destruction. Utterly abhor and detest it, for it is set apart for destruction.”

As we seek to obey this scripture and requirement of our God, we must first realize what He considers to be a detestable thing. We are not to allow it to enter this house inside of us or have a legal right to be in our inner being. We cannot give it a legal right to be in our inner being.

If you knew a thief, a liar, deceiver, or even a murderer, would you voluntarily give them a key to your house? No! If you did accidentally and unknowingly give them a key, you would fight to get it back. Once you reclaimed the key, you would change the lock because the one who had access was untrustworthy. This is the mindset and thought process we need to use to prepare and reclaim this inner environment. Our inner house, our inner being, must not be contaminated with the things of this world.

**Romans 12:1-3** “Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God—this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is—his good, pleasing and perfect will.”

We are called to rid ourselves of any form of idolatry, which is any source of sin to comfort us other than Him. This could be any addiction, desire for recognition, and acknowledgment (**Jeremiah 17:5-8**), greed, perversion (**Jeremiah 2:20-25**), or attachments that line with the fruit of the enemy. There is also witchcraft, lying, pride, rebellion, murder (including television shows). Remember the enemy has been a murderer from the beginning (**John 8:44b**). Likewise, there could be judgment, control, deception, unforgiveness, gossip, and godless chatter. All these things contaminate our inner being and become a legal right to the enemy to occupy this territory. Yes, he can occupy the house that is in us. It is where he lives. As we examine ourselves and study the Word, we have the ability to find contaminated areas in our inner house. If we seek, ask, and find from the Lord, He will reveal contaminated areas in our life. As they are revealed, they can be redeemed and released.

## 2. Our physical home

This can be a home we own or rent. It can also be an apartment or rented room. Even if it is temporary, the environment still needs to be prepared with a hedge of protection, the presence of the Lord, and the promise of a peaceful dwelling place.

**Isaiah 32:17-18** “The fruit of righteousness will be peace; the effect of righteousness will be quietness and confidence forever. My people will live in peaceful dwelling places, in secure homes, in undisturbed places of rest.”

This house is our natural territory and our environment. If we don’t defend it, prepare or redeem it, no one will do it for us. We must clean, defend, protect, and claim this area by creating an environment to be a sanctuary where the presence of the Lord can abide. Biblical principles apply to any area of our life, including our physical house. Like our personal life and Christian walk, we are not to bring anything detestable into these areas. This includes our physical house. (**Deuteronomy 7:26**)

Like our inner being, we are called to follow Biblical principles (**Deuteronomy 5:29**). This is a standard used for favor and the hedge of protection. The Lord had this hedge of protection around Job to keep the enemy away from all aspects of his life. He had to lift this hedge of protection before satan could have any effect on him. As we seek to follow the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God, we are called to make the

choice of obedience. Anything other than obedience is disobedience and rebellion to His ways.

**I Samuel 15:23 “For rebellion is like the sin of divination, and arrogance like the evil or idolatry.”**

The King James version uses witchcraft instead of divination. They are both the same.

Some people are content to take whatever comes along in life as long as their basic needs are met. They truly perish for a lack of knowledge and miss out on this promised hedge of protection. Some are content to not seek and know the deeper things of God. When we use scriptures as a mandate for well-being, we know to walk in repentance. Also, we know to speak to mountains and claim our homes as holy ground in Jesus’ mighty name. Similar principles apply to our inner home. We do not bring detestable things into this house either. Obedience means we are to study God’s word and learn to discern what the Lord considers to be a detestable thing. Partial obedience is not obedience. Anything attached to any form or teaching of witchcraft cannot enter this physical house. If it is already there, take it out and burn it (**Deuteronomy 7:5-6**). Any form of witchcraft is forbidden: books, tarot cards, ouija board, horoscope, good luck charms, zodiac signs, superstitions, worship of astronomy or astrology, gazing balls, crystals, African bottle trees and gargoyles. Scripture says have nothing to do with these things (**Deuteronomy 4:19, Jeremiah 8:2, and Isaiah 2:6**). Also, scripture forbids any idol or teaching that glorifies other man-made deities such as buddha, hindu or muslim teachings, masonic regalia and aprons, even pornography which honors and pursues baal. The pursuit of perversion is also an idol, which God considers as our refusal to serve Him by preferring foreign gods and saying to Him that we must go after them (**Jeremiah 2:20-25**). Also, native American Indian dreamcatchers are man-made idols given a god-like function. Even if you have American Indian bloodline, it is still idolatry to follow their customs and have dreamcatchers. All aspects attached to any counterfeit man-made god needs to be destroyed. It has no place in your house. Also, as we fear God and shun evil, and practice spiritual obedience, the hedge of protection comes. It is His way. When we are faithful with a little, He will entrust us with more.

As we ask forgiveness of our sin, our family sin, any other sin that has happened in our house, we have the ability to boldly ask for our territory to be reclaimed and redeemed. If the favor of the Lord is missing, we can reclaim it in Jesus’ name. Our call and goal as believers is to examine our own condition and see if they line up with the promises of God. As we dedicate our house to the Lord and fill it with the things of God, we will experience the promises of God that are yes and amen through Christ Jesus.

**II Corinthians 1:20 “For no matter how many promises God has made, they are ‘Yes’ in Christ. And so through him the ‘Amen’ is spoken by us to the glory of God.”**

### 3. Our place of ministry

The third and final environment is our place of ministry. It may be a church or someone's home. I know of fellowships that meet in recreation halls, club houses, a moose lodge, or other rented facilities. Some church groups rent other church group buildings. Just because we use these places for Kingdom business, does not mean they are sanctified for the presence of the Lord. We cannot assume that these facilities are Holy ground simply because we use them for church meetings. I have known of churches where the youth practice sexuality in the Sunday school rooms during evening services. Also, I have heard of pornography found in the steeple of a church hidden so the older boys could sneak up there during services to look at it. Churches are still filled with people. Some are redeemed, some are not. For a heavier anointing and quicker response of the power of God, it is wise to prepare these meeting place for ministry. This leads to a quicker entrance into the spirit of the Lord moving on our behalf which causes less resistance from the enemy. This preparation causes satan to become unable to resist due to the environment being sanctified and claimed as holy ground. The enemy becomes debilitated when warring and ministering angels are invited to serve and are present. When we meet as a church it is the assumed responsibility of the pastor to prepare the environment and property of the fellowship. This could be delegated to elders, deacons or others in leadership, but often this is not done. The pattern in God's word calls us to be prepared for his presence through repentance of sin if we expect God to move mightily on our behalf. As we repent of our sin, we are washed in the blood and then we can boldly come and ask God to move on our behalf. For example, the priests and Levites had specific instructions on how to prepare themselves to enter into the presence of God. There was a sanctification process. The sanctification process for our time is repentance of sin through the blood of Jesus. This allows us to share in Christ's righteousness, holiness, faithfulness and purity.

#### Testimony

A personal example that I can share about the value of preparation of the environment is as follows: a man had come to our church. He was a high-ranking member of a pagan motorcycle club who became a Christian and wanted deliverance. As I prepared the environment for God to come and move on our behalf, we all repented of sin. We claimed the place as holy ground by the name and blood of Jesus. We invited the warring and ministering angels to come and serve and do warfare on our behalf. We asked for the full armor of God each piece in place. As ministry began, I noticed this man was manifesting in a way that seemed aggressive. He wore a sleeveless shirt and his arms were covered in tattoos with skulls, confederate flags and the silhouette of a naked woman. He was tightly gripping the arms of the chair. You could visibly see veins protruding through the skin. I felt like he was going to punch me. I asked the warring angels to hold him back. Instantly, he was forced back into the chair. His arms went to his chest and his elbows were out shoulder height. He frantically looked left and right as though to try to see what was holding him in place. The demonic rose up in him and the man looked at me and said, "Man of God, I would be all over you if you were not wearing that armor!" This man received deliverance and freedom that day. This is a testimony of the validity of the power of preparing your environment for the Lord's work.

Below is a list of practical principles which promise greater anointing and more empowerment in our ministry environment.

1. Repentance of sin from leadership and everyone that will be involved in the ministry. If this is not practical due to time restraints, the leader may ask for forgiveness of sin of everyone involved. After repentance of sin, we can come boldly before the Lord and ask for things.

**Hebrews 4:16** “Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need.”

2. Claim the place of ministry as holy ground by the name and blood of Jesus. Place a ring of His blood around the property-north, south, east, and west. Take on a warrior mentality. Drive the enemy out of this environment.

**Matthew 11:12** “From the days of John the Baptist until now, the kingdom of heaven has been forcefully advancing and forceful men lay hold of it.”

We can ask these things in Jesus’ name.

**John 14:12-15** “I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father. And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the Father. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it.”

3. Invite the warring and ministering angels in to do warfare on our behalf. Ministering angels can worship and sing blood praises to the Lamb.

**Hebrews 1:14** “Are not all angels ministering spirits sent to serve those who will inherit salvation?”

**Psalm 34:7** “The angel of the Lord encamps around those who fear him, and he delivers them.”

**II Kings 6:15-17** “When the servant of the man of God got up and went out early the next morning, an army with horses and chariots had surrounded the city. ‘Oh, my lord, what shall we do?’ the servant asked. ‘Don’t be afraid,’ the prophet answered. ‘Those who are with us are more than those who are with them.’ And Elisha prayed, ‘O Lord, open his eyes so he may see.’ Then the Lord opened the servant’s eyes, and he looked and saw the hills full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha.”

4. Each person involved should ask for the full armor of God-each piece in place. (**Ephesians 6:10-18**) Again, if under time restraints, leadership can ask for this for all in attendance.
5. Worship if possible and time allows. God inhabits the praises of His people.

**Psalm 22:3** “But thou art holy, O thou that inhabitest the praises of Israel.” KJV

6. Call the function of the enemy null and void in the name of Jesus Christ.

**Mark 11:23** “I tell you the truth, if anyone says to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and does not doubt in his heart but believes that what he says will happen, it will be done for him.”

**I John 4:4** “You, dear children, are from God and have overcome them because the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world.”

7. Invite the Holy Spirit in to dwell among you in this prepared environment.

**Matthew 7:11** “If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

God, in trinity, can come in and dwell among us and move mightily on our behalf. This causes deeper levels of anointing for ministry and peace.

**Isaiah 32:17-18** “The fruit of righteousness will be peace; the effect of righteousness will be quietness and confidence forever. My people will live in peaceful dwelling places, in secure homes, in undisturbed places of rest.”

The above list is an example of how to claim our inner being or personal dwelling place as a sanctuary. It is a proper, Biblical example of how to prepare your environment or reclaim your territory. For special ministry purposes, such as deliverance, a short list of several additional steps are required.

- 1) Invite the waring and ministering angels in to do warfare for our sake. The waring angels have swords drawn for protection against demonic attack. The ministering angels will sing blood praises to the Lamb. Invite in the Angel of Truth to smite spirits if they lie to the individual’s mind.
- 2) Bind and break the power of the spirit of mind control in Jesus’ Name. The spirit of mind control is always attached to the alter personalities. This witchcraft spirit gives the individual receiving ministry the ability to disassociate.
- 3) Bind and break the power of any trigger words that have been spoken over their lives. People receiving ministry may have been attached to satanic ritual abuse but have no recollection of this. These trigger words are intentionally implanted into the individual to cause them to disassociate to prevent them from receiving ministry and freedom.
- 4) Bind and break the power of all seals of silence and vows of secrecy in Jesus’ name. Many victims of abuse were forced to vow secrecy and silence by the perpetrator.

- 5) Say out loud, "In the spiritual realm I create a wall of the Blood of Jesus between alter personalities and demonics." The warring angels will perform this function in Jesus' name. This becomes a time of peace for the alter personality. Perhaps this is the only time they are able to speak to the core person's mind without demonic influence. This way, information can be gathered by the minister: what is the name of the alter, the age of the person when the alter was created, the function of the alter (what it was created to do), and how many alters help to perform that function. Write down all received information.
- 6) Get the individual receiving ministry to read the Prayer to Release Alters (that is located on [boblucyministries.org](http://boblucyministries.org) website under the Prayers' Tab).
- 7) Take the Bible (the Sword of the Spirit), and separate by waving the Bible in front of the client. Call up the first alter personality the Lord would have for ministry, and tell them to speak their name to the individual's mind. The individual speaks out what they have heard in their mind.

**Hebrews 4:12-13 "For the Word of God is living and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even into dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart. Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account."**

- 8) After alter ministry and information has been documented, have the client read the Prayer to Remove Alters (which is found on the website). The minister can help when the client reads the prayer regarding listing the alters' names to be removed.
- 9) At this point in the ministry, have the individual read the Prayer to Remove Demonics (found on website).
- 10) After the prayer is completed and the Lord has done the work of deliverance, anoint them with oil in the Name of the Lord and pray for them for specific needs, and pray for their refreshing in the Holy Spirit. We also pray that the Lord fill the places that were swept clean and empty from deliverance.



## Chapter Eleven: Maintaining Your Newfound Freedom and Identity in Christ After Deliverance

### Introduction

In God's creation of us as individuals, we all respond to salvation, healing, overcoming, renewal, and deliverance in different ways. Some need a heavy feeding of scripture to acquire faith building and renewal of the mind while others may need to work on intimacy with the Lord. I believe that all of us need to seek out and receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit for empowerment to overcome. Others must get the flesh out of the way and learn how to crucify it. Some who have been through trauma and abuse, sexual, physical, or mental, will need to study and apply scriptures on true forgiveness. They may need to release alter personalities created for self-protection and ask the Lord for wisdom on how to truly forgive their perpetrators.

Although He created us in His likeness, we are all individual in our ministry needs. In His creation of us, our call and anointings and giftings are unique. Our call is what He has created us to do and the anointing is how He has empowered us to do it. This call and anointing comes from the Heavenly Father as He creates us fearfully and wonderfully at conception. Jesus said in the temple, after unrolling the scroll of Isaiah, "the spirit of the sovereign God is upon me because *He* has anointed me to preach good news to the poor." (see **Isaiah 61:1-3**). This means the Heavenly Father created the call and anointing on Jesus. He proclaimed Jesus to be the savior of the world through his ultimate sacrifice on the cross.

As we no longer perish for a lack of knowledge in certain areas, we can receive renewal of the mind. Until renewal of the mind occurs, we still perish for not understanding the ways of the Lord and the requirements of our God. We also remain under the curse of not seeking out truth in scripture and continue to reap the Biblical curses attached to disobedience. Our promised abundant life, ministry, call, and family line suffer due to our lack of knowledge.

**Hosea 4:6 "My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. 'Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priest; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.'"**

In this process of maintaining freedom and our newfound identity in Christ, renewal of the mind is necessary. After deliverance, there is an "empty house" within us. It has been swept clean, emptied, and put in order. Earlier in this book is a teaching on Matthew 12:43-45 (See Chapter Ten on Preparing Your Environment and Reclaiming Your Territory). While seeking renewal and a different lifestyle and identity after deliverance, we need to fill this place with the things of God. He has already given us all necessary tools for this process.

**II Corinthians 10:3-5 "For though we live in the world, we do not wage war as the world does. The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the**

contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds. We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”

## What Are These Weapons?

God requires that we know and use these mighty weapons. These tools are used in maintaining our deliverance and empowering us for renewal of the mind. Through renewal we will not think as we did before. Use of these weapons fill up the places in us that have been swept clean and emptied from deliverance. Application of these mighty weapons also stop the repeating cycle of renewing legal rights to the enemy to continue stealing the promises of God and our spiritual inheritance.

### 1. Make Jesus Lord of all areas of your life

The place to start is making Jesus Lord of all areas of your life. As we hunger to know Him more, we are required to allow Jesus the supremacy over life. This is obtained through obedience to scripture and inviting Jesus Christ to be our counselor, teacher, instructor, convictor, and savior. He should be the Lord of every area, every thought, action, and weakness. As we acknowledge Him as the Lord of all areas of our life, we are proclaiming Him as our savior and the savior of the world. Walk in repentance and practice obedience. This enables us to maintain our freedom and newfound identity. Keeping our eyes on Jesus and following His teachings causes our faith to grow and become stronger and more perfect. As we become empowered with scripture, we become empowered with Jesus. Remember, He was the Word from the beginning (**John 1:1**).

**Hebrews 12:2a “Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith.”**

In seeking the presence of God in our lives, Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, we learn to realize how much our creator is involved. He longs to bless and protect us. His desire is to fellowship with us, be our provider, healer, and deliverer. He also longs to be relational with us, not only when we need something, but on a constant level: a friend, a Father, and our God.

**Matthew 10:29-31 “Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet, not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Father. And even the very hairs on your head are all numbered. So, don’t be afraid; you are worth more than many sparrows.”**

His longing is for us to be His people and for Him to be our God. He desires to bless us as individuals and our generational lines endlessly.

**Exodus 20:6 “But showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments.”**

### 2. The Word of God and daily scripture study

These mighty weapons are the truth in the Word of God. These are His promises which are spiritual law, and we are required to accept and apply them. Remember,

spiritual law happens whether we perish for a lack of knowledge or refuse to obey. In our new identity, this is how we live.

**Matthew 4:4** “Jesus answered, ‘It is written: Man does not live on bread alone but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.’”

The practice of daily scripture study is necessary to build faith and acquire renewal of the mind. The Word washes us, our mind and thoughts. It causes us to think differently and align those thoughts with the Word of God. **Hebrews 5:26** teaches that the Word of God washes and cleanses us.

**Romans 10:17** “Consequently, faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ.”

As we align our thoughts with the Word of God, we align them with Christ. **John 1:1-2, 14, and Revelation 19:11-16**, all teach that Christ is the Word. He is the fulfillment of all scripture. Make time for Him to speak to you through the Word. As we become filled with scriptures, we become filled with Him.

Anything such as a lifestyle choice, thought-pattern, or created system that does not align with the Word of God is anti-christ. It is irrelevant if it is acceptable in society. It is still anti-christ if it goes against scripture. It is a deceptive spirit and has an end time agenda to destroy mankind.

### **3. The Name of Jesus and His pure and Holy Blood**

Scripture testifies and Jesus taught that if we ask the Father for things to be done in His name, it shall be done. This means there is power in the name of Jesus. He has been given all authority and His name is to be used by those who believe in Him. His pure and holy blood, that was shed at Calvary is to be used as the cleansing agent for sin. It was by design from the Heavenly Father that no other sacrifice for sin is necessary. As we repent, He is faithful to forgive us and cleanse us (**1 John 1:9**).

### **4. Renewal of the mind**

As we long for renewal of the mind, scripture teaches us biblical principles we must follow. These are His promises and we are required to accept and apply them to our lives. We are called to follow His instruction instead of natural desires in order to reap the benefit of the promises of God. Renewal of the mind means we no longer think the same as before.

For example, it is human nature to want to be in control. Those who come from a place of abuse naturally acquire tendencies to control their environment. This can evolve into controlling all aspects of life in order to self-protect. This is the opposite of God’s requirement. His desire is to be so intimate with us that we hear His voice and respond. He wants to be our healer, friend, savior, provider, and deliverer. Control is usually the hardest thing to surrender when seeking renewal of the mind. The issue of wanting to be

in control is you are no longer relying on God. It is a form of idolatry. As long as we stay in control, God gives us over to follow our own devices.

**Psalm 81:12 “So I gave them over to their stubborn hearts to follow their own devices.”**

Scripture teaches how to trust God in these areas of self-protection. As we trust in the Lord, He instructs us to lean not unto our own understanding. These are areas of fear and contamination from past experiences. Long term control causes us to use different tools to acquire the same effect: manipulation, deception, intimidation, and lies. This is a ploy of the enemy to maintain legal rights to himself and the spirit of witchcraft to keep us bound in doubt, unbelief, hopelessness, fear, and faithlessness. Control is the opposite of spiritual law and leaves little room for renewal of the mind. As we compare our thoughts to scripture, we learn how God requires us to respond to situations. There are many forms of renewal of the mind. As we examine ourselves, we can see where we fall short of the requirements of God. Renewal for some may mean trusting God with your finances. For others, it may be resting in Him versus being anxious. As we observe our thought processes, the biblical principle is always to make our thoughts line up to be obedient to Christ who is the Word.

## 5. Worship

Each individual is more acquainted with certain weapons that they are more accustomed to using. They gravitate to weapons that are comfortable and familiar to them and because of this experience the presence of the Lord more readily. Some naturally gravitate to worship. Isaiah 61:3 references a garment of praise, instead of a spirit of despair. This means that to walk in a spirit of despair is a legal right to a demon. The enemy cannot stay in an environment of worship. The Spirit of the Lord chooses to abide in our praise.

In being reminded of the many stories in Scripture, I more understand the verse Paul wrote in I Corinthians.

**I Corinthians 10:6,11, “Now these things occurred as examples to keep us from setting our hearts on evil things as they did.”**

**11, “These things happened as examples and were written down as warnings for us, on whom the fulfillment of the ages has come.”**

There are many instances where the Lord used worship as a mighty weapon to move on behalf of His people. Remember that He has created us, He will sustain us, and He will rescue us.

**Isaiah 46:3-4, “Listen to Me, O house of Jacob, all you who remain of the house of Israel, you whom I have upheld since you were conceived, and have carried since your birth. Even to your old age and grey hairs I AM He Who will sustain you. I have made you and I will carry you; I will sustain you and I will rescue you.”**

- Paul and Silas

A wonderful story, of deliverance and of being rescued by God using the power and anointing of worship, is the story of Paul and Silas.

**Acts 16:16-34** (Please read to understand this writing.)

This Scripture tells us the story of Paul and Silas traveling to find a place of prayer. On their trip they met a lady who was possessed with a spirit of divination, and she could predict the future. For days she followed them and was yelling out, "These men are men of God and they are coming to tell you how to be saved." After days of this, Paul turned to her and said, "In Jesus Name, I command this spirit of divination to leave this woman." When the spirit left, and she could no longer prophesy the future, her owner was upset at his loss of finances attached to her no longer being empowered to predict the future.

As the story proceeds, the owner of the slave girl had Paul and Silas arrested and severely beaten. This meant that they were whipped and put in prison with their feet in chains. Remember that they were only traveling to find a place of prayer and did not deserve any of the happenings that they had been through. Scripture tells us that in the midst of their troubles, around midnight they were praying and singing hymns to God. This act of worship and seeking God caused a violent earthquake. All the prison doors were opened, and the chains fell off of Paul and Silas. The chains also fell off of all the prisoners. The head guard grabbed his own sword and was ready to commit suicide assuming that all the prisoners had escaped. Paul said, "Don't harm yourself, we are all here." He was so relieved that he sat at Paul and Silas' feet and listened to the gospel of salvation. He and his family believed the gospel of Jesus Christ, got saved and was baptized. This story is a wonderful testimony of how God honors us worshipping and seeking him in the midst of our troubles. This story is an example of worship causing God to move in might and power on our behalf.

- **King Jehoshaphat Calls the Men to Worship**

Some scriptures are written that teach us that God requires worship in order to move mightily. Another wonderful story in scripture tells us of how God can mightily move through worship against our enemies. I encourage looking up the scriptures and read this powerful story of God protecting His people due to their trust in Him as their deliverer and rescuer. They caused God to move on their behalf by the king requiring corporate worship and fasting before warfare.

## **II Chronicles 20:1-30**

This scripture is a reminder that our battles belong to the Lord. Although the odds of this battle were against the people of God, He moved mightily on their behalf. This was caused by godly leadership seeking guidance from God, trusting in Him, and having faith that He would deliver them from their enemies.

This is an exciting story of God's goodness and His requirement for us to worship Him in times of trouble. As you study the above Scripture, you will understand more of this story. At the end of the battle, which God won for Israel, it took the Israelite people

three days to gather all the plunder. This is because, in the natural realm, the three nations going to war with Israel, far outnumbered the Israelite army. The nations that were ungodly saw things in the natural, and they knew they would win this battle. They brought everything that they owned (their families, their tents, their herds, food, clothes, yard tools, weapons, garden ploys, everything). God still operates in this way (He does not change and will remain the same).

**Numbers 23:19a, “God is not a man, that He should lie, nor a son of man, that He should change His mind.”**

**Hebrews 13:8, “Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever.”**

- **The Testimony of Deliverance by Participating in Corporate Worship**

In the early 1990’s, I was on staff as a worship leader in Richmond, VA. This was a fast growing church in the city near Virginia Commonwealth University (VCU). Many students would walk to church because it was just a few blocks from the school and the dorms. One morning before the service started, I saw a young man walk in. He was a college student experimenting with his appearance and identity. He was finding out who he wanted to be and become. I was glad to see him come in for worship, but his hair was two tone colors. The left side of his hair was lime green, and the right side was dark purple. He, like many other students, was experiencing being on his own for the first time. This included many tattoos on his body.

As worship started, there was an excitement in the air as the Spirit of the Lord was present. Our band was large, loud, and very talented with a full team of fourteen people. The church was known as “The Flock that Likes to Rock.” Into our third song of worship, the Holy Spirit was moving in might and power in the sanctuary. We knew that the Spirit of the Lord was there to move in His people and to reward those who believed and those who were earnestly seeking Him.

**Hebrews 11:6, “And without faith it is impossible to please God because anyone who comes to Him must believe that He exists and that He rewards those who earnestly seek Him.”**

The worship song we were singing was “The Enemies’ Camp.” It was a well-loved Brownsville revival worship song which testified that we were going to take back what the enemy had stolen from us. Also, it repeatedly proclaimed that the enemy (satan) was under our feet. In the midst of this extreme worship, with four hundred people singing that satan was under their feet in unison, this VCU student with the multicolored hair screamed out loud. He not only screamed, but he filled the church with the loudest and most intense screaming I had ever heard. It was much louder than our fourteen piece worship band. The scream shocked the group, and it took a moment to regroup and finish the song. As worship finished up and the sermon was over, I went and spoke to the young man. Breaking the ice from not knowing him, I told him he should try out as a singer with my band because of his powerful voice. We both laughed, and I saw from the expression on his face that he had no idea what was going on. I asked

him with all kidding aside, what came over him to scream out so loudly during worship? He said that he didn't know what happened and did not mean to scream out. Because I was twice his age, he said, "Sir, all I know is when I walked into this church, I was a heroin addict, and I ain't one anymore!"

This shows how the Lord can rescue and deliver us mightily from oppression and possession as we participate in worship. It is an offering to Him that God chooses to abide in (whether individual or corporate worship), God chooses to move mightily on behalf of His people. Those involved who honor Him by wanting to experience His presence, His healing, and favor, He will show up to deliver and rescue them.

## 6. Prayer and intercession

Some people experience God's presence the strongest during prayer and intercession. The Lord seeks people who desire to know and obey Him. He longs to be intimate with us and offers many ways for us to enter and experience His presence.

Scripture tells us that as we pray and intercede for others, we are taught to do so with thanksgiving. This sets an expectancy in us that God loves. As this spiritual law is honored, He promises to give the prayer warrior peace. This peace He gives, transcends and surpasses our human understanding. The enemy cannot stay in this prayerful environment. **Philippians 4:4-7** It is our obligation to want to learn His ways. Moses, King David, and Paul asked God to show His ways so they could know Him more.

**Exodus 33:13a** "If you are pleased with me, teach me your ways so I may know you and continue to find favor with you."

**Psalms 25:4-5** "Show me your ways, O Lord, teach me your paths; guide me in your truth and teach me, for you are my God my savior, and my hope is in you all day long."

**Philippians 3:8-10a** "What is more, I consider everything a loss compared to the surpassing greatness of knowing Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose sake I have lost all things. I consider them rubbish, that I may gain Christ and be found in him. Not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith which is in Christ-the righteousness that comes through God and is by faith. I want to know Christ and the power of his resurrection and the fellowship of sharing in his suffering."

God longs for us to follow the pattern of these three men. They were all restored murderers who longed to know God more and more. Like us, they were human and dealt with sin and disappointments, but they hungered to know Him more rather than maintain their fleshly desires and physical cravings. If we realized how much He longs to find willing and available people who love and serve Him, it would change our perspective about personal sin.

**2 Chronicles 16:9a** "For the eyes of the Lord range throughout the earth to strengthen those whose hearts are fully committed to him."

## 7. Asking

Many times, we do not realize the act of asking is also a weapon.

**Matthew 7:7-8** “Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks, receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened.”

As we discover and use these mighty weapons, He is faithful to show us more. If we have trouble understanding Biblical principles, we simply need to ask for wisdom and understanding.

**James 1:5-8** “If any of you lacks wisdom, he should ask God, who gives generously to all without finding fault, and it will be given to him. But when he asks, he must believe and not doubt, because he who doubts is like a wave of the sea, blown and tossed by the wind. That man should not think he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all he does.”

## 8. Belief and faith

According to this scripture, belief and faith are also mighty weapons. In the process of learning to know Him more and using these mighty weapons for spiritual warfare, we are filling the places that through deliverance have been swept clean, emptied, and put in order in this internal house.

## 9. Obedience

Obedience is a choice to put our desires, ideas, and opinions away and follow His requirements.

**James 1:22** “Do not merely listen to the word, and so deceive yourselves. Do what it says.”

**I Samuel 15:22** “But Samuel replied: ‘Does the Lord delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices as much as in obeying the voice of the Lord? To obey is better than sacrifice, and to heed is better than the fat of rams.’”

**Deuteronomy 5:29** teaches us the generational blessings of obedience. Just as God boasted to satan that Job feared God and shunned evil, this is also our requirement. (**Job 1:1-11**) Because of Job’s obedience, God told satan that there was no one on earth like him. Satan responded that God had put a hedge of protection around him and all he owned. Our obedience can cause this hedge of protection to be in our lives, as well.

**I Corinthians 10:11** teaches us that all scripture was written as warnings to us and teaches us the standard of God’s requirements. Scripture teaches that He owns the world and all that is in it. (**I Corinthians 10:26**) He claims us as His children. As we become empowered with scripture and the knowledge of God, we become empowered with Christ.

This is necessary to maintain our freedom and realize our new identity in Him. We must learn what His will, plan, and call is for our life.

**Romans 12:1-2** “Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God-this is your spiritual act of worship. Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is- his good, pleasing and perfect will.”

This knowledge and our obedience cause us to become a people who are not deceived by the things of the world. (**Matthew 24:24**) We have become a people called “the elect”. This is the Bride of Christ that he is coming for. People that are spotless and without wrinkle. They are a people that are unable to become deceived because they are empowered with the truth of God’s Word.

**Ephesians 5:27** “...and to present her to himself as a radiant church, without stain or wrinkle or any other blemish, but holy and blameless.”

This becomes our new identity and lifestyle – to know Him and to want to know Him more. As we follow in this process, we are continually filling up the house inside of us that has been swept clean and empty from deliverance, with the things of God.

## 10. Living life through the spirit and not the flesh

Often, we know our own weaknesses and shortcomings. As we acquire the knowledge of scripture, we learn where our lives do not align with the Word of God. In our process of finding our new identity, we must realize our flesh and spirit war with one another.

**Galatians 5:17** “For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so you do not do what you want.”

**Galatians 5:19-25** teaches us a distinct separation between living by the flesh or living by the Spirit.

## 11. Baptism of the Holy Spirit

This is one of our strongest and most-needed weapons. There is an empowerment of the Holy Spirit we can receive called the Baptism of the Holy Spirit which is available for believers who ask for more. This empowerment from God enables many to succeed in overcoming areas of weakness of the flesh. It also allows to receive more of Him and opens our eyes to see areas where we are deceived.

**Matthew 7:9-11** “Which of you, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!”

John the Baptist, who prepared the way for Jesus' ministry, spoke of this baptism.

**Matthew 3:11** "I baptize you with water for repentance. But after me will come one who is more powerful than I, whose sandals I am not fit to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire."

See Prayer to Receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit at the end of the book. For anyone who wants to pursue this deeper, here are some scripture references: **Acts 2; 8:14-17; 10:44-46; 11; 19:6; Jude 1:20.**

For deeper teaching on how to receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit, I encourage you to visit my friend and fellow minister, Dr. Mark Virkler's website: [www.cwgministries.org](http://www.cwgministries.org) CWG means Communion with God. Go to the Resources tab, there you will find a free copy of a booklet on how to receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit.

Mark is a minister, pastor, and friend who was kind enough to write the forward in this book. He has anointed, detailed teachings on hearing God's voice and receiving the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. This gift from God is an empowerment to assist with the warfare attached to overcoming.

## 12. Word of our testimony

**Revelation 12:11a** "They overcame him by the blood of the lamb and the word of their testimony."

This scripture emphasizes that when we use the mighty weapons of the blood of Jesus and the word of our testimony, we are able to overcome the power of the enemy. Below is a story which illustrates the mighty weapon of the power of a testimony and the empowerment that comes with the baptism of the Holy Spirit.

There are many wonderful testimonies of people who have become empowered by the Holy Spirit. A lady I know well from years in the ministry gave me permission to use her testimony.

She was very intelligent and well-studied. She earned a master's degree in English. Studying and acquiring knowledge came easy to her and she subsequently enrolled in law school. She became a well-known trial lawyer. After several years of working with a law firm, she decided to start her own law practice and became a criminal and divorce lawyer. In the natural realm, it seemed that she was successful: young, smart, attractive, popular, and wealthy. Amid all these wonderful things, she felt empty. Her education, wealth, and life achievements were not fulfilling her. When we are purely natural beings and have not allowed the almighty God to influence us, the only thing we know to strive for are the things of the flesh. We are only looking for fulfillment in what the world has to offer. In her struggle to fill the emptiness, this young lady turned to alcohol. This was her preferred form of self-medication. Because of the misuse of alcohol,

she opened herself up to promiscuity. She became full of shame and over time became an alcoholic.

Moving forward in her testimony, at lunch one day she met someone that seemed to radiate with joy. She noticed he had something different. This attracted her because she wanted to acquire what this man possessed. He had something she desperately wanted and needed. In their conversation, he began to tell her about Jesus. He shared that she could experience peace in her life if she should accept Him as her Lord and Savior and repent of her sin. She told him her family went to a denominational church often throughout her childhood, but she had never heard the story of the cross and salvation. As he brought forth the gospel message, she accepted Jesus Christ as her Lord and Savior. As she repented of the sin of her life, she started to experience some of the peace. She was no longer blind to the things of God and the conviction of sin.

**II Corinthians 4:4 “The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.”**

The “god of this age” referenced above is satan. Because of the sin in mankind, he is empowered to blind the minds and hearts of those who do not believe. God has given satan this authority as a punishment to those who choose not to believe or acknowledge him as God.

This woman’s heart, mind, and spirit was opened to receive the presence of the Lord. For the first time in her life, she realized that God existed and loved her. In the excitement of her salvation, her newfound friend asked if she wanted more. She immediately said, “Yes!” He prayed for her to receive the Baptism of the Holy Spirit. She responded by speaking in other tongues. He prayed that she would be empowered to overcome and receive the ability to hear more from God. In this simple act, this lady immediately felt conviction of her alcohol abuse and promiscuity. The Holy Spirit caused her to feel this conviction. Through this Baptism of the Holy Spirit, she was delivered of both oppressions. Years later, she maintains her deliverance. This testimony portrays the deliverance power of receiving the Baptism of the Holy Spirit.

**Philippians 1:6 “Being confident of this, that he who began a good work in you will carry it on to completion until the day of Christ Jesus.”**

### **13. Water baptism**

Another mighty weapon to fill this empty place after deliverance is water baptism. If you have not been water baptized, you should do this. This is a Biblical representation of what Christ did by dying on the cross and rising again. It is a line in the sand showing the past is gone and we rise into a different life. If you were baptized when you were young, not knowing what it meant, you may need to be baptized again. It is part of the great commission which Jesus spoke of. Water baptism in scripture is a requirement and is an important principle and symbol of salvation.

**Mark 16:16** “Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned.”

Jesus also taught his disciples to baptize new believers. Not only is this a requirement, but it shows our desire to be obedient to the pattern Jesus set before us. It is a matter of sowing different things in your life. It is a fresh start—a new beginning. Water baptism symbolizes obedience and represents being washed in the water and becoming dead to the old way of life and alive to the new way of life in Christ. Water baptism is also an outward expression to those who see and are around. This individual getting baptized is proclaiming that they are going to follow Jesus, His teachings, and example. As we imitate His pattern, we are following Him and practicing obedience. Many have been healed of physical and mental infirmities and received deliverance because of water baptism.

#### **14. Stay away from your pre-deliverance life stories**

After deliverance, some individuals continually sow the same things into their lives but expect different results. This is not wise, and is one of the many definitions of insanity. This is not who you are anymore. No longer are we to seek attention and sympathy from our old stories. It is human nature to repeat stories that are familiar. Biblical principles show it is comfortable for us to return to the things we know.

**II Peter 2:22** “Of them the proverbs is true: ‘A dog returns to its vomit’ and ‘A sow that is washed goes back to her wallowing in the mud.’” (See Proverbs 26:11)

So many miss the mark in this area. Just because a story is familiar, does not mean it edifies your newfound freedom. After deliverance, who you were no longer defines you. The old story has nothing to do with your new identity unless you are using it to tell your testimony. In the past, this life story may have produced sympathy and attention from others. Stop repeating these stories of betrayal and hurts. As we hang onto these old stories, we are showing that these areas are not redeemed. It shows there are areas of unforgiveness and judgment that are not in the past, but we are still carrying them along with us as our identity. This is *not* our new identity. Instead, our identity should be who we are in Christ, and who He says we are. The story is the same in many areas of our life. If we starve a beast, a monster, or an ungodly thought process in our life, it dies. If we feed it, it thrives and reroutes itself back into us.

**Galatians 3:29** “If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.”

**II Corinthians 5:17** “Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old has gone, the new has come!”

When sharing your testimony, it helps others to overcome similar areas of trouble (areas that need redemption) in their lives. Your powerful testimony of salvation, deliverance, and healing can encourage others to overcome. Only use old stories to proclaim how Jesus set you free.

**John 8:36** “So if the Son sets you free, you will be free indeed.”

**Proverbs 18:21** “The tongue has the power of life and death and those who love it will eat its fruit.”

### 15. Start a pattern of a prayer life and walk in repentance

I believe as we acquire our new identity, it is necessary to start a daily pattern of prayer life. When we pray, we make a choice to set everything aside. We are opening a level of communication between us and our God for intimacy and direction.

We are called to walk in repentance of all known and unknown sin.

**Matthew 6:6** “But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret will reward you.”

In our prayer life, there is an opportunity to ask for forgiveness of the sin in our life. We are called to accept the conviction of sin, which comes from the Holy Spirit. (**John 16:7-9**) Experiencing conviction of sin is the key to realizing that we need repentance. Repentance is another mighty weapon in maintaining freedom.

**2 Chronicles 7:14-15** “If my people, who are called by my name, will humble themselves and pray and seek my face and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land. Now my eyes will be open and my ears attentive to the prayers offered in this place.”

**Leviticus 5:17** “If a person sins and does what is forbidden in any of the Lord’s commands, even though he does not know it, he is guilty and will be held responsible.”

**Matthew 3:8** “Produce fruit in keeping with repentance.”

Many do not realize when we do not repent it is the same as saying to the Heavenly Father that we have no sin. Sin needs to be acknowledged and confessed before we can become redeemed in these areas(see **Jeremiah 2:3-5 and Jeremiah 8:5-7**). The practice of walking in repentance keeps a short account of sin between us and our God.

### 16. Full armor of God

Another Biblical pattern for our prayer life, is to ask for the full armor of God. (**Ephesians 6:10-18**) Through this exercise, we stay fully armed and equipped to take our stand against the devil’s schemes. Once in the midst of an intense deliverance, a demon used the voice of the man using ministry and said to me, “Man of God, I’d be all over you if you weren’t wearing that armor!” This boosted my prayer of faith immensely and taught me why the full armor of God is so necessary. Although the natural eye is unable to see the full armor of God, the spiritual realm sees it in its entirety.

This regular practice of asking for the full armor, each piece in place, shows the demonic realm that we are people of faith. It shows that we know who we are in Jesus. As we ask for this mighty weapon, it testifies to the spiritual law that is written and says, "Greater is He Who is in us, than he who is in the world." **I John 4:4**

## 17. Change your relationships

Do not hang around people who shared your past sin life with you. They were part of the problem. Change your relationships. A time may come for you to minister to these people, but it is not recommended for you to stay in a sinful environment. This is particularly important if you are young in the Lord and are acquiring this new identity as you may be persuaded to get involved in those areas of weakness again. These people may encourage you to return because your salvation story and deliverance questions the systems they have created to get by in life. This system may even have a small part of God and scripture, but it is not based on unconditional surrender to the Lord.

**I Corinthians 15:33 "Do not be misled: 'Bad company corrupts good character.'"**

Instead, follow your Godly call. Pursue what God has created you to do. This is part of your new identity. Do not be concerned about where you came from. Conversely, be concerned about where you are going. Put your energy and efforts into that.

As we find Scripture, Bible based churches, and fellowships, we see a people who are practicing obedience as well. If they are farther along in their walk than you are, praise God! They can teach and encourage you. If you are farther in your walk than some of them, praise God! You can teach and encourage them. Remember Scripture tells us in **Proverbs 27:17** that as we meet together, iron sharpens iron.

## 18. Be thankful and stop complaining

**Philippians 4:4-7 "Rejoice in the Lord always. I will say it again: Rejoice! Let your gentleness be evident to all. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God. And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus."**

We are commanded to make a choice to rejoice in Him. His reward is peace that surpasses all understanding (**Philippians 4:4-7**). As people who become familiar with scripture, we learn and realize that when we complain, the Heavenly Father perceives it as though we are complaining to Him (see **Numbers 14:26; Exodus 16:7-8; Deuteronomy 1:27**). He is the only one who can change circumstances. Do not do it. We cannot question His ways because they are above our ways.

**Isaiah 55:8-9 "For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways,' declares the Lord. 'As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways and my thoughts than your thoughts.'"**

**James 5:9 “Don’t grumble against each other, brothers, for you will be judged. The Judge is standing at the door!”**

A large part of our complaining is to one another. Christ left us an example of how we are to live.

**I Peter 2:21-23 “To this you were called, because Christ suffered for you, leaving you an example, that you should follow in his steps. ‘He committed no sin, and no deceit was found in his mouth.’ When they hurled their insults at him, he did not retaliate; when he suffered, he made no threats. Instead, he entrusted himself to him who judges justly.”**

As believers, this is to become our way of life. Let this spiritual Truth become our pattern of how to handle ourselves, each other, and our thoughts. As we take on the mindset of renewal of the mind, there is freedom in pursuing and being thankful. We are to practice rejoicing and being joyful. It is a choice and a Godly thought process.

**Psalm 118:24 “This is the day that the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad in it.”**

## **19. Learn to bless and not curse.**

**Numbers 24:9b “May those who bless you be blessed and those who curse you be cursed!”**

**Genesis 12:3a “I will bless those who bless you, and whoever curses you, I will curse.”**

God has called us as elect believers to become a people of blessing. Prior to deliverance and renewal, human nature causes us to practice judgment, hatred, and unforgiveness. This is all part of our system we created for self-protection. Rise above this and reap the reward of obedience. Bless and be blessed. Curse and be cursed. It is His way, and we are required to follow it. As we learn to bless, we are showing fruit of renewal of the mind. It is so much easier to forgive, release, and bless. The alternative is more refinement from Him. This makes us align with His Word and call. Until we get this area straight, we continually reap what we have sown, and according to the measure we have sown, it shall be measured unto us. It is spiritual law!

## **20. Examine your own fruit**

Scripture tells us to examine others by their actions.

**Matthew 7:16a “By their fruit you will recognize them.”**

Jesus explains, while teaching his disciples about communion, that we should examine ourselves.

**I Corinthians 11:28 “A man ought to examine himself before he eats of the bread and drinks of the cup.”**

We need to consider and know our thoughts and intentions.

**II Corinthians 13:5 “Examine your selves to see whether you are in the faith; test yourselves. Do you not realize that Christ Jesus is in you-unless, of course, you fail the test?”**

Stay away from conceit, self-promotion, and selfish ambitions. These are examples of what we are to consider in our own thoughts and intentions.

**Philippians 2:3-4 “Do nothing out of selfish ambition or vain conceit, but in humility consider others better than yourselves. Each of you should look not only to your own interests, but also to the interests of others.”**

**James 3:16 “For where you have envy and selfish ambition, there you will find disorder and every evil practice.”**

## 21. Practice obedience

Meet Godly conditions and requirements.

**James 4:6b “God opposes the proud, but gives grace to the humble.”**

**James 4:7 “Submit yourselves, then, to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.”**

This scripture teaches that first we must submit to God. Next, is to resist the devil which means to shun evil. The reward for this obedience is that the enemy will flee from you. Obedience is the trigger for God to move on your behalf.

**Exodus 23:22 “If you listen carefully to what he says and do all that I say, I will be an enemy to your enemies and will oppose those who oppose you.”**

**Romans 16:19-20 “Everyone has heard about your obedience, so I am full of joy over you; but I want you to be wise about what is good, and innocent about what is evil. The God of peace will soon crush satan under your feet.”**

## 22. Do not entertain thoughts of doubt, unbelief, or fear

If we continue in faithless thought patterns and godless chatter, we, in turn, will not be able to enter God’s rest. We will be held accountable for our words, and it is wise to pay attention to what we say. If we utter worthy, not worthless words, God will allow us to be his spokesperson (see **Jeremiah 15:19**).

**Hebrews 4:18-19** “And to whom did God swear that they would never enter his rest if not to those who disobeyed? So we see that they were not able to enter, because of their unbelief.”

**Hebrews 5:14** “But solid food is for the mature, who by constant use have trained themselves to distinguish good from evil.”

**Psalms 91:1** “He who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will rest in the shadow of the Almighty.”

Scripture teaches us to come in alignment with what has been written.

**II Corinthians 10:5** “We demolish arguments and every pretention that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”

**Proverbs 3:5-6** “Trust in the Lord with all of your heart and lean not on your own understanding; in all your ways acknowledge him, and he will make your paths straight.”

As we ponder this scripture, it tells us not to rely on our own understanding. Our own understanding is where our doubts, unbelief, and fear reside. It is based on past experiences and memories that cause us to feel the need to protect ourselves. The Bible tells us 365 times not to be afraid. Falling into fear brings us into doubt and unbelief. Scripture teaches us that if we pray and do not believe, we will receive what we have asked for. We become double minded and become unstable in all we do. **James 1:6-8**

### **23. Become Desperate to Maintain Freedom**

As part of our long-term freedom and healing, it is necessary to break legal rights to the enemy due to short-comings, weaknesses, and sin. As we walk in repentance, we are able to call the enemy’s function over our life null and void. We are able to speak this over our family, even if they haven’t yet come into the faith. As we walk in this mind-set, we are speaking to mountains and waiting in faith for the mountains to move. We cannot entertain apathy because the enemy is always waiting for such an entrance point and legal right. Apathy re-invites oppression and demonics to bring us back to where we started.

As a quick reminder: Keep your house clean. Do not let anything come into your house that can cause a legal right for the enemy to be there as well.

**Deuteronomy 7:26** “Do not bring a detestable thing into your house or you, like it, will be set apart for destruction. Utterly abhor and detest it, for it is set apart for destruction.”

Do not piecemeal your deliverance experience by only seeking enough help for a temporary relief. This is only a band aid over the wound. Seek all aspects and the fullness of your deliverance. I have seen many come for ministry and stop before

completion. They always end up worse than when they started because the legal rights of the enemy remain.

**Matthew 12:43-45** “When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the house I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first.”

#### 24. Find a Bible-preaching church or like-minded believers

This part of maintaining your freedom is crucial. Find friends, fellowship places, and events that challenge you to know Him more. This gives us faith building experiences from another person’s walk which will edify our own perspective. As we hear other testimonies and apply them to our life, it empowers us to overcome our own areas of weaknesses.

**Proverbs 27:17** “As iron sharpens iron, so one man sharpens another.”

Believers are required to meet together. When you tuck into your own world, there is no room for growth or challenge. Meeting together enables us to share, and we are held accountable. As we share, we teach and learn at the same time. Look for mentors who are seasoned Christians. People who can build up your faith and teach you from their experiences. Find others on your own level of spirituality or depth in order develop friendships with like-minded believers and reinforce growth with one another. This is someone with which you share your walk and grow together. Lastly, find someone who is under-equipped spiritually-someone with which you can build faith, edify, and teach young believers or unsaved. Feed them nuggets of spiritual wisdom. The combination of these three spiritual relationships is the ideal and most-healthy spiritual walk.

**Hebrews 10:25** “Let us not give up meeting together, as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another-and all the more as you see the Day approaching.”

Scripture also tells us to confess our sins to one another. (**James 5:16**)

Look for a place to serve. (**Matthew 20:28**) As you meet together, you can discover where there are short-comings and unmet needs in the body of Christ. Look at your own giftings. What has God made easy for you? Is it teaching, administration, hospitality, or musical talents? Is there a place in you that gets excited about taking care of children and teaching Sunday school? I was greatly influenced and am thankful for the people that taught me. There are so many places to serve. What comes easy to you marks your call. Serving is a gift to God and others. It gives us an opportunity to experiment in what we are gifted and called to do.

**Romans 12:6-8** “We have different gifts, according to the grace given us. If a man’s gift is prophesying, let him use it in proportion to his faith. If it is serving, let him serve; if it is teaching, let him teach; if it is encouraging, let him encourage; if it is contributing

**to the needs of others, let him give generously; if it is leadership, let him govern diligently; if it is showing mercy, let him do it cheerfully.”**

## **25. Learn to distinguish the voice of the Lord**

As we learn to distinguish the voice of the Lord, we must consider the four sources of a voice that speaks to our mind. See Chapter 8 on Alter Personalities: Definition and Teaching. The four sources are (1) yourself; (2) the Lord; (3) the enemy; and (4) an alter personality. There are no other sources. The Lord is the distinct source of goodness and love. His voice always aligns with scripture with no deviation, and always contains truth, counsel, and edification. Even if there is discipline, the testing of your faith develops perseverance. (see **James 1:2-4**) A fellow minister, evangelist, and pastor friend named Dr. Mark Virkler has taught extensively on hearing the voice of God. I would encourage you to visit his website ( [www.cwgministries.org](http://www.cwgministries.org) ) to acquire his books and teachings. He is anointed and gifted in this teaching and has learned practical applications for the gift of hearing God’s voice and discerning this voice from others. Here is quick overview of this teaching from his website: “Seek intimacy with God, and learn to hear his voice.” (Thank you, Mark Virkler on this teaching on Four Keys to Hearing God’s Voice; <https://www.cwgministries.org/Four-Keys-to-Hearing-Gods-Voice>)

- A. Go to a quiet place and still your own thoughts and emotions.
- B. As you pray, fix the eyes of your heart upon Jesus, seeing in the Spirit the dreams and visions of Almighty God.
- C. Recognize that God’s voice in your heart often sounds like a flow of spontaneous thoughts.
- D. Two-way journaling or the writing out of your prayers and God’s answers, brings great freedom in hearing God’s voice.

Summary of Seven-Step Meditation Process (thank you, Mark Virkler, for this teaching; <https://www.cwgministries.org/7-step-meditation-process-explored>).

1. Write the verse.
2. Quiet your mind and become still, loving the Lord through soft soaking music or praying in tongues
3. Reason
4. Speak and imagine
5. Feel God’s heart
6. Hear God’s Rhema (voice)
7. Act

Lastly, return to number 1 on this list: Continually make sure that Jesus is Lord of all aspects of your life. He longs to be Lord of our victories and our failures. Recognize Him as a sufficient sacrifice for repentance of sin. Know Him as a healer, our protector, and provider. Know Him as our personal Savior and the Savior of the world. He has provided a way for us to know Himself, the Father, and the Holy Spirit.

**Hebrews 12:1-3 “Therefore, since we are surrounded by such a great cloud of witnesses, let us throw off everything that hinders and the sin that so easily entangles, and let us run with perseverance the race marked out for us. Let us fix our eyes on Jesus,**

the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. Consider him who endured such opposition from sinful men so that you will not grow weary and lose heart.”

Matthew 28:18-20 “Then Jesus came to them and said, ‘All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.’”

My prayer for everyone who turns to this book for teaching is that the anointing the Lord put on my life will enhance the call on your life. Be blessed and filled with all goodness, healing and deliverance and renewal of the mind in Jesus’ mighty name!

## Chapter Twelve: Description of Ministry Procedures

### Ministry of Identifying, Removing, and Releasing Alters to Jesus and Removing Demonic

How does one receive this ministry of deliverance, healing, and renewal of the mind? There is a method and order to receiving this ministry. Inform yourself and prepare yourself for ministry. Read this book in full. Contact Bob Lucy via [www.boblucyministries.org](http://www.boblucyministries.org) or prepare for ministry through your local ministry contact.

Print and complete the Application & Consent for Personal Ministry. Be honest about your personal history. Scan and email the completed and signed Application to Bob Lucy or your local ministry contact prior to your appointment for ministry. If you cannot scan and email the completed document, mail the completed and signed Application. This is a prerequisite to the actual ministry appointment. This document will be held in strict confidence. At the end of this document, there is a place for the recipient to sign. This gives the minister the legal permission to share and speak into your life. Without this signature, there would be no ministry.

Pray each of the Prayers referenced in these chapters. These Prayers also appear in order at the back of this Manual. Your healing can begin now, as you claim these promises and ask the Lord to begin your deliverance. As you repent of the sin in your life, known and unknown, you can come boldly to the Lord in confidence. This is a written Scripture which makes it spiritual law. As you claim each prayer for yourself, you will be breaking legal rights to the enemy. Each prayer breaks legal rights in different areas. Many people have experienced some freedom just by reading through the prayers.

Schedule a telephone or Skype™ appointment with Bob Lucy for personal ministry or schedule an appointment with your local ministry contact. We recommend your appointment include no more than two hours of actual ministry time, excluding the preliminary prayers and praise and worship.

A team should include at least three persons, with one person in authority. In this teaching, the person in authority is referred to as the Leader. No leader should minister alone in person to an individual in need of ministry. There should always be an intercessor/witness. In telephone ministry, three-way telephone or Skype™ conferences are recommended.

No man should minister to a woman by himself. No woman should minister to a man by herself.

Deliverance sessions are confidential. Nothing shared during this ministry time should be discussed outside the private ministry session. Ministers and witnesses must never reveal confidences. If this happens, it is the sin of gossip. It is also not courteous to the vulnerable person who has humbled themselves for ministry. Seeking, teaching, and counsel on deliverance is fine, but watch out and resist gossip and self-promotion.

There should never be “spectators” present at a deliverance session. Deliverance ministry is not a “spectator sport.” People who are not redeemed and prepared, should not be around. This is an open door for demonics that have been cast out from the recipient, to enter the unredeemed people in the room. The ministry team and the person receiving ministry should be covered in prayer. There should be no irrelevant conversations, gossip, chatter, or distractions in the room.

It is not recommended that family members, spouses, or close friends be present. It is not recommended that parents of a minor child be present when the child is to receive ministry. Deliverance exposes deeply personal areas of the human soul. This must be accomplished without interference from the emotions, expectations, or opinions of family or friends.

Further, a spectator is vulnerable to demonic attachment if he or she attends with an unclean motive, including, but not limited to, curiosity, a need to control, or doubt and unbelief.

### **Prepare the Recipient to Stay Free: New Identity in Christ**

The Leader introduces the Ministry Recipient to his or her new identity available in Christ after deliverance. This happens by the leader speaking to the wounded individual the hope and promises of God. This is the beginning of the renewal of the mind. There also comes teaching and encouragement through the Body of Christ, that they will stand and agree with you for your healing. There is power in agreement.

The Lord wants us to understand who we are in Christ and how precious we are to Him. He loves us beyond our comprehension. We are fearfully and wonderfully made by God. (See **Psalm 139:13-15**) God loved us so much that He sent His Son to die for us. (**John 3:16**)

To maintain freedom achieved through deliverance, we must let go of our old ways of thinking. As we long to change who we are, the Lord will help us release old ideas and familiar but detrimental behaviors. As we allow the Lord to change our identity, and who we think we are, He changes us into who He has created us to be. There is a Biblical promise in **Joel 2:25** that God will replace the years that have been stolen and that the locusts and canker worm have eaten.

A person creates systems to survive, to deal with adverse situations in childhood and otherwise. The Lord knows we must release these old systems. The Lord will become all-sufficient to us if we let Him dissolve the old mental structures and habits that we created. God will align our thinking with His Word as we study the Bible. Remember that the Word washes us.

To stay free in our new identity in Christ, we must stop repeating and reporting our old wounds, injuries, and stories of abuse. We must choose to speak out our

testimonies of freedom and deliverance, and refuse to rehearse our stories of past miseries.

No matter how powerful a deliverance session may be, a person will not hold on to his new freedom without changing his thought patterns. We cannot maintain our deliverance unless we renounce these old systems. This is the beginning of renewal.

In order to receive renewal, we must relinquish past ungodly thought processes. They were created by our ungodly reactions to former wounds and pain. We must repent of our unforgiveness, anger, resentment, and judgment, for example, and refuse to dwell in our former ungodly reactions. If we choose to keep this mindset and system for attention and ulterior motives, or because of familiarity, we will re-do all the legal rights which the enemy had in these areas.

After repentance, there is abundant life. We are not required to repent repeatedly for our past sins and former ways of thinking. This belittles the authority and completeness of repentance. After the removal of alter personalities and the spirit of mind control, it will be easier to move on from past trauma. After deliverance, the person will not be driven to repeat and rehearse stories of old wounds and pain. This is the beginning of renewal: no longer thinking the same way.

In our new identity in Christ, we move past our old ways. We will fulfill the things God created us to do. We can become loving, nurturing, and well-able to respond to God's calling in our lives. We are to become people of blessing, who readily forgive, bless, and release the people who hurt them in the past.

### Individual Deliverance Session

The Leader starts the session by anointing each individual with oil, in the Name of Jesus.

Begin every deliverance session with prayer in the Name of Jesus Christ. Everyone involved in the deliverance session, including the Leader and all team members, should pray aloud individually, if time allows, and repent of all sin, known and unknown.

If time is limited, the Leader leads the group in prayer of repentance, asking for forgiveness for the sins of everyone in the session, including team members and the Recipient present for ministry. **“The prayer of a righteous person availeth much.” James 5:16 (KJV).**

The Leader claims the ministry location as holy ground in the Name of Jesus and by the Blood of Jesus. As this process is happening, the leader also has the authority to place a blood line around the property. This blood line is the blood of Jesus, and it is requested to surround the property to the north, east, south, and west. This is a prayer of faith the same as asking for the full armor of God. These things we don't see with our physical eyes, but the demonic realm does.

The Leader binds any hindrances to the ministry, and declares their function null and void in the Name of Jesus.

The Leader binds and breaks the power of any spells, curses, or incantations, and calls their functions null and void; binds any spirits of calamity or spoken word curses that would come against this ministry or anyone involved in this ministry.

The Leader prays for an open Heaven over the location. He prays for God's revelation knowledge. He asks warring and ministering angels to come and war against any demonic presence that would hinder the ministry. They work on behalf of the Ministry team and Recipient seeking healing and deliverance.

The Leader invites the Angel of Truth to smite demonics that would lie to the Recipient's mind.

The Leader prays for the full armor of God to be placed on each individual on the ministry team and on the Recipient, with each piece in place. See **Ephesians 6:10-18**.

The Leader will bind and break the power of the spirit of mind control. The Leader prays to create a wall of the Blood of Jesus to separate the alters from the demonics. This action is important because it prevents the demonics from speaking and interfering when the Leader addresses the alter or alters during ministry. This will be the first time that the alter personalities have been able to speak to the recipient's mind with no demonic influence.

The Leader breaks the power of all trigger words that have been spoken over the Recipient, and calls their function null and void.

The Leader speaks out and declares that all demonics will submit to the Word of God, the people of God, and the Blood of the Lamb. He will say, "We the people of God declare that no demonics leaving the individual receiving ministry will be allowed to affect (cause pain, choking, embarrassment). No demonic is allowed to attach, torment, or enter anyone else in this room or facility while leaving." Also in this anointing of speaking to mountains, we have the authority to call the function of the enemy null and void in Jesus' Name. This is for the benefit of the individual receiving ministry, and for the team.

Worship: All participants worship the Lord with music, if available. The Holy Spirit abides in the praises of His people.

- **Ministry Begins:**

The Leader has in his possession the signed Application and Consent for Personal Ministry and has reviewed it in full before the ministry session.

The Leader addresses the person presenting himself or herself for ministry (the "Recipient") and asks the person the following questions in the presence of the ministry team:

- a. Have you read the Blood Covenant of Salvation Prayer? Have you accepted Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior? (If yes, proceed. If no, do not proceed with deliverance. Person must be saved in order to proceed with this form of ministry.)
- b. Have you read all the prayers 1 through 13 and claimed them for yourself?
- c. We will be using the remainder of the prayers 14 through 16 during this ministry.
- d. In reference to the Masonic Prayer, did you read aloud each individually numbered prayer? If not, we will take some time now with you to read through the masonic degrees together aloud.

- **Leader Directs Individual in the Prayer to Release Alters**

Individual must read and pray the **Prayer to Release Alters to Jesus**: Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus, I, \_\_\_\_\_, pray forgiveness for the sin of creating alters. There have been times in my life when I suffered from the lack of knowledge. I now realize these alters have been trying to do Your job in my life, which would be to comfort, protect, and counsel me. I repent for the sin of not casting my cares on Jesus as the Word says. I repent for the sin of creating alters which are idols that say, "I can handle my own problems." So I speak to all alters I have created, and I say: "Thank you for the job that you have done. You were there when I needed you. I now release you from me and from your function. I say that you will leave now and go to be with Jesus." I now choose to trust Jesus in these areas where the alters have been functioning. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondages, enslaving thought patterns, familiarities, and dependencies to these alters in the Name of Jesus. I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deuteronomy 28:13**) to have Jesus and the Holy Spirit come and fill all places in me where alters are. I forgive, release, and bless anyone who has caused me to create alters. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people, and I expect the alters to do the same thing and align with my will. I ask these things in the mighty name of Jesus. Amen.

- **Ministry of Calling Up, Identifying, Releasing, & Removing Alters**

The Leader applies the Word of God to separate the spirit from the flesh within the individual. To do this, the Leader holds up the Bible in front of and in the sight of the individual and declares, "I take the Word of the Lord and separate and call up the first alter personality that the Lord has for ministry."

**Hebrews 4:12: "For the word of God is alive and active. Sharper than any double-edged sword, it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow; it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart."**

The Leader says, "I call up the first alter personality the Lord has for ministry." The Leader is directly addressing this statement to the alter. The Leader directs the alter

personality to speak its name to the individual's mind, stirring the individual's "fourth voice" to speak to the individual's "core person." (For detailed teaching on fourth voice, see chapter 8.)

The individual's answers or statements will come as spontaneous thoughts or images in the individual's mind. The individual receiving ministry should be spontaneous, and go with what comes to mind. Do not question or try to analyze the thought or image; simply speak it out. If you hear something, speak it out, even if you do not understand it.

The Leader asks: "What's your name?" The names may be like the person's childhood nickname, such as "Pudding", referring to a very small, tender girl.

A name such as "Sunshine" could mean many things. For one individual, this was the name given to an alter created to help a young woman be alluring.

The name may describe a function such as unforgiveness, pride, arrogance, disobedience, control, manipulation, or shame. The Leader should ask: "How old was the core person when you were created?"

As The Leader discovers the identity of each alter, the Leader or Witness summarizes the answers in writing. Notes are retained as a confidential record. Following is an example of session notes:

# of Alter Up for Ministry	Name of Main Alter	Age of Person when Alter created	Function of Alter	# of Alters to Assist Main Alter
#1	Pudding	2 yrs.	Nickname from childhood	
#2	Peggy	6 yrs.	Help w/trauma of being bitten by dog	8 alters
#3	Sunshine	19 yrs.	Help to be alluring	15 alters
#4	Unforgiveness	8 yrs.	Protect from anyone who had spoken against her	3 alters
#5	Runner	8 yrs.	Ability to split and run	6 alters
Core Alter	Vixen	9 yrs.	Created to call up other alters	See below for explanation of Core Alter

The Leader asks, "What was the purpose of your creation?" Discover the alter's function, what it was created to do. For example: "I was created to help her with the trauma of being bitten by a dog." Alters are always attached to some form of trauma, inefficiency, or ungodly belief. Once you hear the name of the alter personality, write it down. Same with the age of the person when the alter was created. Also write down the

function of the alter personality, what was it created to do? The Leader asks: “How many alter personalities have helped you perform this function?” As the individual answers this question, write down the response.

The fact that you are identifying a number of alters which help perform functions with each main alter indicates to the Recipient that the ministry is going to be complete. We are going to release all alters, both named and unnamed, to the Lord. Continue cycling through the above series of questions until all alters have been identified and the voices are gone, and the individual has become still and peaceful in his or her mind.

One of the blessings of deliverance is the person’s mind becomes peaceful and the “chatter” is gone. The racing and ceaseless torment of thoughts darting through the person’s mind stops. This is the beginning of the person being able to enjoy the covenant of peace, paid for by Jesus Christ. **Isaiah 53:5 “But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.”**

During deliverance ministry, there often comes a time when the Individual seems to stop hearing from further alters. This may not mean that all alters have been released and removed. It may simply mean the person is exhausted and needs to rest. A second or subsequent ministry session is entirely appropriate in this situation.

- **Core Alter**

For individuals who have had many alters requiring extensive, exhausting, and time-consuming ministry, there is likely a “core alter”. This core alter is in charge of the other alters, and may have a name indicating its function, such as “Control”, “Secretary”, “Administrator” or “Delegator”. The job of the core alter is to call up whichever alter is needed in a certain situation. As the busiest and hardest working alter, it is always exhausted and overwhelmed. At some time during ministry, the core alter can often be persuaded to come forth for ministry and will itself call up all the remaining alters. When this happens, the core alter and all the remaining alters can be removed at one time. The Individual then experiences total freedom from alters, and is ready to become free of the attached demonics.

## Prayers

### 1. Prayer to Remove Alters

**The Individual prays this Prayer to Remove Alters:** Heavenly Father, in the name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_, come before You, and speak as the head and not the tail, and I say that all alters that I have created, will become redeemed by the blood of the Lamb, just as I have. They will accept Jesus Christ, as their Lord and Savior just as I have. Therefore, I repent of the sin, of creating alters, and not casting my cares on Jesus, as the Word says. So I say that now, these alters, (name them) \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, and all spoken and unspoken alters, will release all their rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, to my will, and to my emotions. And I ask You, Lord Jesus, to come and take these alters away with You, to a place where there is no fear, abuse, rejection, lies, or performance, and they leave with You now. Thank You, Jesus. Amen.

The Leader gives the Individual a moment to release the alters to Jesus. Often, the Individual will have a wonderful vision of the Lord healing him or her. The vision or thought may be a confirmation of the person being changed and healed by the power of the Lord. The Leader may encourage the Individual to share any vision or word from the Lord. This encourages the person and the ministry team. However, the Individual may not necessarily hear or see anything unusual. The Individual may experience a quiet and healthy wave of peace.

The Individual is now ready to pray against and speak to any demonics by praying the **Prayer to Remove Demonics**. The significance of all the work done prior to this point can be appreciated. The Individual has read this book, prayed all the prayers, and has participated with the ministry team in releasing alters to Jesus. The work has been done in the spiritual realm. The work is done by praying sincerely and claiming for oneself the breaking of generational curses and sins of the bloodlines, breaking of ungodly soul ties, breaking of masonic curses, release of bitter root judgment and expectancy, repenting of personal sin, and release and removal of ungodly thought processes and reactions and mindsets. Because of the Individual's work in the spiritual realm, these areas within the person have become redeemed. (See [www.boblucyministries.org/prayers](http://www.boblucyministries.org/prayers).)

Praying the **Prayer to Remove Demonics** is speaking to demonics in the spirit realm and taking authority over them.

**Luke 10:19 (AMP)** “Listen carefully: I have given you authority [that you now possess] to tread on serpents and scorpions, and [the ability to exercise authority] over all the power of the enemy (Satan); and nothing will [in any way] harm you.”

### 2. Prayer to Remove Demonics

The individual prays this **Prayer to Remove Demonics**: I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name) speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, strongest spirit attached to (my

generational line, the soul tie realm, the removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, mindsets, or beliefs) to speak for and pull to itself all attached heads of the spirit of satan; all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control; all heads of python with all python eggs; all Indian heads of witchcraft; all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical; all heads of rejection; all heads of fear; all heads of perversion; all heads of idolatry; all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs; and all heads of murder. I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all (generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, mindsets, or beliefs) spirits, strongmen and families, spoken and unspoken. In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan and I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, to my emotions, and to my will. I command it to submit to the word of God and the blood of the Lamb and leave and go to the pit now! I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

The Leader gives the individual a moment after praying the Prayer to Remove Demonics. The Leader and prayer team prays, “In the Name of Jesus, I command any demonics attached to leave peacefully, quietly, and with no damage, trauma, embarrassment, or torment whatsoever. Be gone.”

Afterward, if anything comes to the person’s mind, the Leader or Witness can write down the thought, vision, image, or word.

### **Ministry Procedures for Healing**

The Leader and ministry team anoints the person with **oil** in the Name of the Lord. They lay hands on the person and pray for healing. They pray for the Lord to fill the person with His Spirit, especially filling all places where alters and demonics have been. Remember these places in our inner being have been swept clean and emptied. They have been emptied from deliverance, and need to be filled with the things of God.

This is the beginning step of the individual’s new life in which the individual is to fill himself or herself with the Spirit of the Lord, worship, intercession and prayer, and Scripture so the unclean spirits will not return. Fill this inner house and redecorate with the things of God (out with the old, and in with the new).

**Luke 11:24-26** “When an impure spirit comes out of a person, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the house I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house swept clean and put in order. Then it goes and takes seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that person is worse than the first.” See also **Matthew 12:43-45**.

The Leader and ministry team encourage the Individual to complete the ministry session. They pray specifically for all physical, mental, and emotional healings. They encourage the Individual to take all further steps to line up with the promises of God's Word.

Responsible steps for the Individual will include systematic Bible study, a disciplined prayer life, church attendance at a Bible-believing Christian church, worship, fellowship with other Bible-believing Christians, and sharing his or her testimony about what the Lord Jesus Christ has done. These are necessary steps in the process of successful, long-term renewal.

### **Brief Ministry Procedures**

How does one receive this ministry? There is a method and order to receiving this ministry. Here are the steps:

1. Contact Bob Lucy via [www.boblucyministries.org](http://www.boblucyministries.org), or prepare for ministry through your local ministry contact.
2. Print, complete, and sign the Application and Consent for Personal Ministry. Be honest about your personal history.
3. Pray the prayers listed on [www.boblucyministries.org](http://www.boblucyministries.org). Pray each of these prayers, numbers 1 through 13.
4. For a personal ministry appointment, email Bob Lucy at [boblucyministries@yahoo.com](mailto:boblucyministries@yahoo.com).
5. Before beginning the ministry session, all people involved must repent of personal sin. All ministry team members and the Recipient of ministry pray aloud for the forgiveness of sins.
6. The Ministry Leader repents of his personal sin aloud, and claims the location of the ministry session as holy ground by the Name and the Blood of Jesus.
7. The Ministry Leader speaks out and declares that all demonics will submit to the Word of God, the people of God, and the Blood of the Lamb. He will say, "We the people of God declare that no demonics leaving the individual receiving ministry will be allowed to affect (cause pain, choking, embarrassment). No demonic is allowed to attach, torment, or enter anyone else in this room or facility while leaving." Also in this anointing of speaking to mountains, we have the authority to call the function of the enemy null and void in Jesus' Name. This is for the benefit of the individual receiving ministry, and for the team.
8. The Ministry Leader invites warring and ministering angels to assist in the ministry session.
9. The Ministry Leader invites the Angel of Truth to smite unclean spirits if they lie.

10. The Ministry Leader asks for each ministry participant to receive the full armor of God, each piece in place (see Ephesians 6).
11. Bind and break the power of the spirit of mind control. This step is necessary because when a person creates an alter identity, he invites in a spirit of mind control. Mind control (witchcraft) enables the person to dissociate, which means he will not remember the trauma. Mind control must be rendered powerless in order to free the person to release alters.
12. Bind and break the power of any trigger words that have been spoken over the Recipient's life.
13. Ask the Lord to create a wall of the blood of Jesus Christ between the alters and the demons that are attached to these alters. This wall of separation is important as it keeps the demons from speaking when you are addressing the alters and asking the alters to identify themselves.
14. Recipient prays aloud the **Prayer to Release Alters**: "Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus, I \_\_\_\_\_, pray forgiveness for the sin of creating alters. There have been times in my life when I suffered from a lack of knowledge. I now realize these alters have been trying to do Your job in my life, which would be to comfort, protect, and counsel me. I repent for the sin of failing to cast my cares on Jesus, as the Word says to do. I repent for the sin of creating alters, which are idols that say, "I can handle my own problems." So I speak to all alters I have created, and I say to them: "Thank you for the job that you have done. You were there when I needed you. I now release you from me and from your function. I say you will leave me now and go to be with Jesus." I now choose to trust Jesus in these areas where the alters have been functioning. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondages, enslaving thought patterns, familiarities, and dependencies to these alters, in the Name of Jesus. I desire as the head and not the tail (Deuteronomy 28:13) to have Jesus and the Holy Spirit come and fill all places within me where alters are. I forgive, release, and bless anyone who has caused me to create alters. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people, and I expect the alters to do the same thing and align with my will. I ask these things in the mighty Names of Jesus. Amen."
15. The Ministry Leader lifts the Bible and says, "I take the Word of the Lord and separate and call up the first alter the Lord has for ministry." The Leader is speaking directly to the alter. The Recipient waits to hear the response in his mind. This may take a moment. Do not hurry through this process.
16. The Ministry Leader speaks with the Recipient and inquires if he is hearing a name or seeing an image or remembering an event from his past.

17. The Ministry Leader asks the name of the alter, and the Recipient responds with what he hears in his mind. The name is written down.
18. The Ministry Leader asks the age of the Recipient (core person) when the alter was created. The Recipient speaks the age. The age is written down.
19. The Leader asks the Recipient the function for which the alter was created. The Recipient responds with the information on why the alter was created to do. This function is written down.
20. The Leader asks how many other alters help perform the function the alter was created to do. This information is written down.
21. This process (described in steps 14 to 20) is repeated for each alter.

The Recipient needs to keep his mind calm and listen for a response. He does not need to nervously try to think of past events. Recipient's answers to the Leader's questions will be spontaneous thoughts or mental pictures. Remember when ministry happens, the leaders are talking to the alter personality, and not to the person receiving ministry. They are stirring the fourth source of the voice that has spoken to the recipient's mind since the alter personality was created.

- **Sample of Ministry Questions:**

1. Declare: "I call up the first alter personality the Lord has for ministry." As the Ministry Leader speaks this, the Leader is addressing the alter personality directly.
2. Ask: "What's your name?" Names are important. The name might be the name of an invisible childhood playmate for a lonely child. The name could state the function, such as "Runner" that helped the child run away from uncomfortable or awkward situations. The alter "Crystal" denotes the function of making the young girl invisible so that people would look right through her and not notice her. The child did not want to be noticed. The name may be similar to a demon's name or function, such as unforgiveness, pride, arrogance, disobedience, control, manipulation, or shame.
3. Ask: "How old was the core person when you were created?"
4. Ask: "What was the purpose of your creation?" Example: I was created to help her with the trauma of being teased in school because she was overweight. Example: I was created to help her with getting through a piano recital when she did not know the music and was humiliated. Example: I was created to help her when an unpleasant boy grabbed her and kissed her roughly. Alters are always attached to some form of trauma.
5. Ask: "How many alter personalities have helped you perform this function?" When a number of alters are identified, this indicates the entire area will be revealed and redeemed. All these alters, both named and unnamed, will be released to the Lord.

6. Continue cycling through the above questions until all alters have been identified and the voices are gone. The Recipient becomes still and quiet inside. The ministry session ends at this time.

**Normal ministry procedures:** All alters can be and frequently are released and removed in one ministry session. The session also involves casting out the demons that were assisting these alters. For efficient ministry, call the core alter forward, which may be named “control” or “administrator” or “secretary” or “delegator”.

The core alter is the strong alter in control. It calls up needed alters for different purposes in the person’s life. The core alter is the alter in charge. The Leader asks if the alter in charge can bring up all remaining alters.

If it answers “Yes,” then the Leader prays to release the alters and have Jesus remove them. The Leader speaks to all named and unnamed alters, and cleans out remaining alters as a group, together with the core alter.

**Prayer**

- **Prayer to Remove Alters**

Heavenly Father, in the name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_, come before You, and speak as the head and not the tail, and I say that all alters I have created will become redeemed by the blood of the Lamb, just as I have. These alters will accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior, just as I have. I repent of the sin of creating alters and failing to cast my cares on Jesus, as the Word says. So I say now that these alters, (name them) \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, and all spoken and unspoken alters, will release all their rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, to my will, and to my emotions. And I ask You, Lord Jesus, to come and take these alters away with You, to a place where there is no fear, abuse, rejection, lies, or performance, and they leave with You now. Thank You, Jesus. Amen.

**Prayer to Remove Demonics**

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs, to speak for and pull to itself the following:

all attached heads of the spirit of satan; all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control; all heads of python with all python eggs; all Indian heads of witchcraft; all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical; all heads of rejection; all heads of fear; all heads of perversion; all heads of idolatry; all heads of leviathan (pride – Job 41:1-34) with all leviathan eggs; and, all heads of murder. I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken. In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, to my emotions, and to my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now! I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen

The Ministry Leader and other members of the ministry team pray for the Recipient. They anoint him with oil in the Name of the Lord. They ask the Lord to fill the Recipient with His Holy Spirit. They ask the Lord to touch him, and heal him physically, mentally, and emotionally. They ask the Lord to refresh and bless him, and anoint him for future ministry as a servant of the Lord.

This is the beginning of the filling of the “empty” places in the recipient, that have been swept clean through ministry.

### **Steps to Maintain Freedom After Ministry**

**Matthew 12:43-45a: “When an evil spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it. Then it says, ‘I will return to the house I left.’ When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order, i.e. empty. Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first.”**

In the future, the Recipient must continue to fill the places in him that have been swept clean and emptied through ministry. The Recipient is responsible for his own “house,” that is, he is responsible for himself.

The Recipient fills himself with Scripture, worship, fellowship, and prayer. He seeks the things of God to keep himself filled. He follows the ways of the Lord, and rejects negative emotions such as anger, unforgiveness, judgment, and hatred. He gives no place to the enemy and refuses to allow old demonic thought patterns or attitudes to move back into himself.

Responsible steps for the Recipient include systematic Bible study, a disciplined prayer life, church attendance at a Bible believing Christian church, worship, fellowship with other Bible believing Christians, and sharing his testimony about what the Lord Jesus Christ has done. These are necessary steps in the process of successful, long-term renewal.

This document has been installed in the Ministry Procedure chapter to be used by leadership or individuals for intercessory purposes. Also, for general information, to understand the structure of organized satanic activity.

## SATANIC CALENDAR

SIGNIFICANT DATES: New & Full moons

Jan. 1-7 St. Winebald Day – animal or male sacrifices on the 7<sup>th</sup>

Jan. 17 Celebration of satanic revelations, female sacrifice (child through teenager)

Feb. 2 Candlemas (celebration of lengthening days and soon coming Spring -3 days before Ash Wednesday)

Feb. 25 St. Walpurgis Day

March 1 St. Eichstadt Day- blood ritual, pay homage to demons by blood, dismember animal, sacrifice it, then consume as a sacrament

March 20-21 (vernal Equinox- days are getting longer) feast day of orgies

April 19-26 preparation for Beltane sacrifice

April 26-May 1 (April 30-Beltane or Walpurgis Night-planting of crops, human and sexual sacrifices of a female Christian) 2<sup>nd</sup> highest holiday

June 21-22 (St. John's Eve midsummer, or summer solstice-the longest day of the year) 3<sup>rd</sup> highest holiday, feast day, orgies

July 1 celebration of demon revelations -sexual and female sacrifices (child through teen), sexual encounters with demons

July 31 (Lammas – beginning of harvest season)

Sept. 7 celebration of *Marriage to the Beast* every 27 years (next one in 2009), human and sexual sacrifice (21-year female virgin), sexual dismemberment

Sept. 20-21 (Michaelmas or “Host of Midnight”, Autumnal equinox-days getting shorter), sacrifice and dismemberment, hands cut off while alive, ritually buried

Oct. 29-Nov. 1 (Oct. 31-Halloween) beginning of witches' year, highest holiday of the year (#1)

Nov. 4 celebration of satanic revelations, sexual sacrifice (female child through teen)

Dec. 21-22 (Winter solstice-shortest day) feast day (Dec. 12-19) 4<sup>th</sup> highest holiday

Dec. 24 demon calling rituals, demon revelations, High Grand climax, human sacrifice (any gender or age)

Each holiday has a window of vulnerability around it 10-15 days before or after it.

If a holiday falls on a Tuesday, they may delay it until the weekend, so they will have more time for the celebration.

If the victim is Jewish, they may move the sacrifice to a Saturday.

If the victim is a Christian, they may move the sacrifice to a Sunday.

Demon revelation-demons appear by passing through people. Satanists pay homage, tribute, and praise in preparation for the coming of satan on Sept. 7.

Satanic revelations is when they call satan himself to pay tribute and honor to him

The satanist's birthday is celebrated.

On Friday 13<sup>th</sup> magical rituals are performed.

On major Christian holidays they may practice orgies and cannibalism.

This satanic calendar has been placed in this book to show that the religion of satanism has annual days of sacrifice. Also, it reveals that there are certain days for specific worship. Some appear to be more important than others. We as believers in Jesus Christ, should not perish for a lack of knowledge in this area. The days listed are reminders for the Christian family to pray against the effects of these ritual dates. When we see what is done in the demonic realm, Jesus said that He has given us all authority to trample on snakes and scorpions. These days listed are when we intercede and call the function of this satanic celebration null and void in Jesus' Mighty Name. Halloween is satan's greatest day of worship and recognition. We as the Body of Christ, should have nothing to do with it.

**Malachi 3:18 "And you will again see the distinction between the righteous and the wicked, between those who serve God and those who do not."**

**Romans 12:9b "Hate what is evil; cling to what is good."**

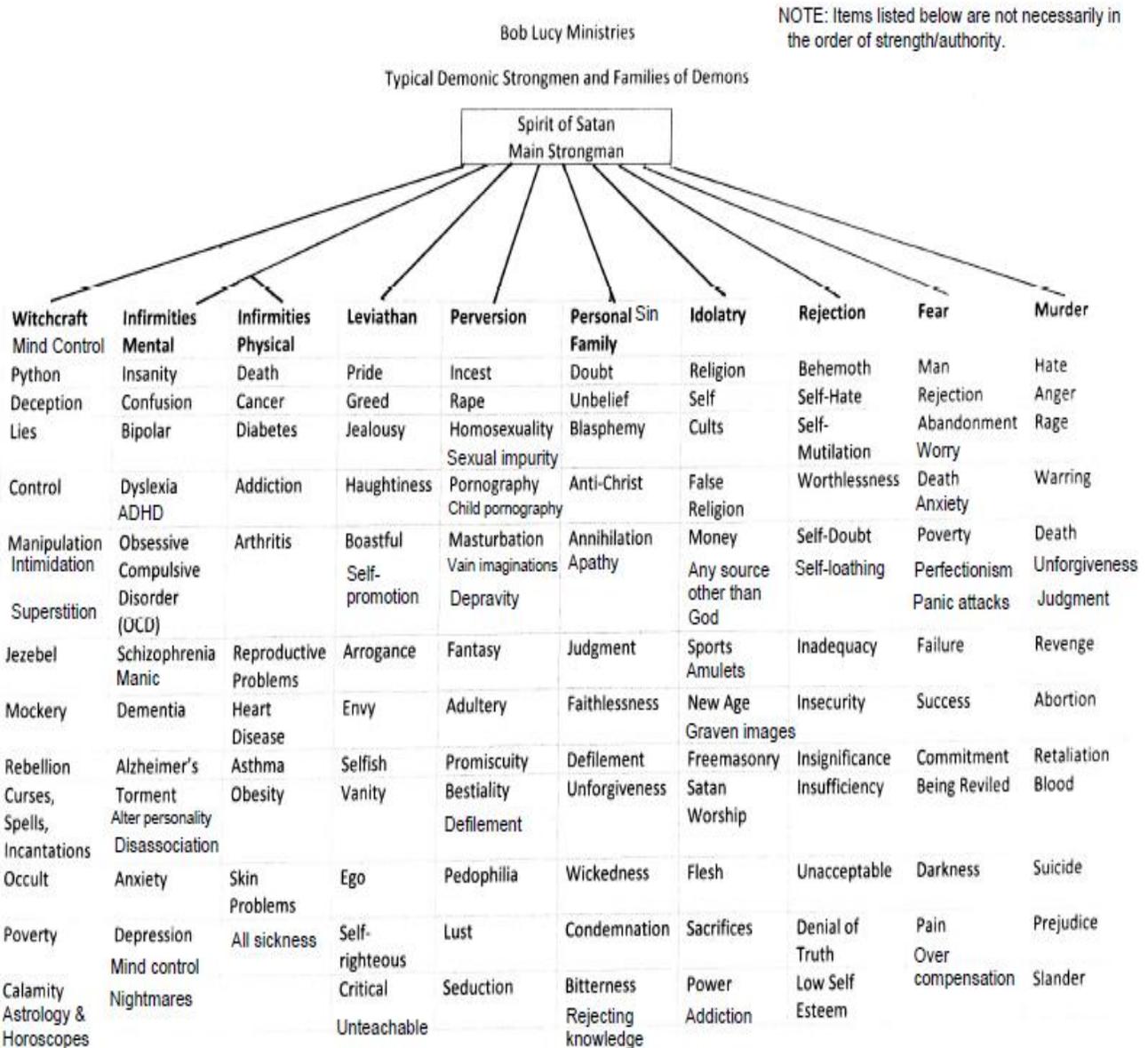
**Romans 12:2 "Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God's will is – His good, pleasing and perfect will."**

**Romans 16:19-20 "Everyone has heard about your obedience, so I am full of joy over you; but I want you to be wise about what is good, and innocent about what is evil. The God of peace will soon crush satan under your feet."**

**Ephesians 5:11 "Have nothing to do with the fruitless deeds of darkness, but rather expose them."**

**II Corinthians 6:14b "For what do righteousness and wickedness have in common? Or what fellowship can light have with darkness?"**

This Demonic Stronghold Diagram has been installed at the end of the chapter. It is a created document on demonic structure. It shows how demonics are organized similar to a military structure with different ranks. This is to teach individuals or ministers the structure and order of demonic authority. There always is a strongman. Satan himself does not carry on all aspects of deception and destruction, but delegates to strongmen that carry out these functions.



Under each strongman listing, there is always lies and deception.

**Chart created by Bob Lucy Ministries**

© 2021 by Bob Lucy, PO Box 58, Coles Point, VA 22442. Permission is granted to copy and distribute this material as long as acknowledgement is included on all copies. It shall not be permitted to modify any content without the express, written permission of Bob Lucy.

## Appendix I

### All Prayers and Application for Ministry

(These reside on [www.boblucyministries.org](http://www.boblucyministries.org) website)



## My Blood Covenant Salvation Prayer

Heavenly Father, I come to You in the Name of Jesus Christ. I believe You love me and sent Your Son to remove the sin which separates me from You. Father, I repent of all sin in my life. Please forgive me and cleanse me by the blood of Jesus Christ.

By faith, I receive Your forgiveness and cleansing in Jesus' name. Your Word says I am brought near to You by the blood of Jesus Christ, through which I enter into blood covenant salvation relationship with You now. Lord Jesus, I invite You to come into my life, and I submit totally to You and to Your Word (**John 14:23**).

I confess with my mouth that Jesus is Lord. I believe in my heart God raised Him from the dead. It is with my heart I believe and am justified, and it is with my mouth I confess and am saved (**Rom.10:9-10**). I ask You to be Lord of my spirit, my soul (mind, thoughts, will, intellect, and emotions), and my body (**I Thess.5:23**). You are faithful to complete the work You have begun in me (**Phil 1:6**).

By faith, I confess sin shall no longer have dominion over me because your Holy Spirit lives in me. I confess I am saved. I am under covenant through Jesus Christ to receive the promises that are for me including salvation, deliverance, healing, renewal, and all God's promises for His children.

I renounce the authority of satan or any authority other than Jesus Christ over all areas of my life. I renounce every stronghold or influence of the devil, including ungodly soul ties, masonic attachments, ungodly beliefs, bitter root judgments, all personal sin, and everything inherited through the generations. The Word tells me I have a heavenly Father, and I now inherit only from Him.

Lord, empower me to live for You. Release the Holy Spirit within me, that He may convict me of sin. I have access to the power of the Holy Spirit and the right to every spiritual gift (**1 Cor. 12:4-11**). Help me walk daily in the fullness of the Spirit filled life. I open my heart and ask You to fill me now with Your Holy Spirit. In Jesus' Name, Amen.



## Prayer to receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit

Heavenly Father, I come to You in the Name of Jesus, Your Son, Who has saved me. I repent of my sins and ask You to wash me clean by the Blood of Jesus.

Jesus said, “And I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper (Comforter, Advocate, Intercessor—Counselor, Strengthener, Standby), to be with you forever—the Spirit of Truth, whom the world cannot receive [and take to its heart] because it does not see Him or know Him, but you know Him because He (the Holy Spirit) remains with you continually and will be in you.” **John 14:16 (AMP)**

In **Mark 1:8**, John the Baptist promised that while he baptized with water, You would baptize with the Holy Spirit and fire. So, Lord, I ask You to baptize me with Your Holy Spirit and fire. I am thankful as I ask for your empowerment and fire, it will refine me into who you have called and created me to be. I know You indwelled me at my salvation (**John 20:22; Romans 8:9**). Now, I ask You to fill me to overflowing with Your Presence, Your power, and Your joy.

You promised in **Acts 1:5-8** that Your disciples would receive power and ability when the Holy Spirit would come upon us. You promised to give us power to be Your witnesses even to the ends of the earth. This wonderful promise was fulfilled at the Feast of Pentecost in Jerusalem, as described in Acts 2.

I pray the Holy Spirit come upon me now. I yield myself to You. I pray you breathe on me a breath of refreshment and empowerment. I receive by faith the baptism of the Holy Spirit. I welcome you, Holy Spirit, in the Name of Jesus. Thank You for empowering me for Your service. Fill me with boldness and courage to speak Your Word with power. I receive this wonderful empowerment by faith.

As promised in **John 14:26**, send me the Holy Spirit, the Advocate, to teach me all things and remind me of everything You teach in Your Word.

I desire spiritual gifts according to Your Word and ask You to grant me Your spiritual giftings according to Your will for my life. I joyfully accept Your gifts for me, in Jesus' Name.



**Prayer to Break Generational Curses and Sins of the Bloodlines:**

Dear Heavenly Father: Thank you that the blood of Jesus is able to take away all sin. I believe this and receive it now in Jesus' name. I pray forgiveness for the sins of my father, of that bloodline for all generations back, and I ask You to wash me clean now, by the blood of the Lamb.

I pray forgiveness for the sins of my mother, of that bloodline for all generations back, and I ask You to wash me clean now, by the blood of the Lamb. I receive Your forgiveness and believe that by Your blood I am cleansed from the sins of all my generational bloodlines.

I take the authority I have in my blood covenant with Jesus Christ, and I break all generational curses on my father's side all generations back, broken now, by the blood of the Lamb. I take this same authority and break all generational curses on my mother's side, all generations back, broken now, by the blood of the Lamb.

With this same authority I have under the blood covenant of salvation in Jesus, I break any spoken curses on my family bloodline. I break the power of all seals of silence and all vows of secrecy.

I take the same authority in the name and the blood of Jesus, and I break all covenants and contracts to satan including blood covenant contracts.

I pray forgiveness for the sins of my family line of all those things that happened in darkness, such as any attachment to slavery or any kind of persecution or mistreatment or abuse of any people groups or individuals, and I pray blessings on all descendants of the persecuted groups or individuals.

I pray forgiveness for the sin of all idolatries attached to the American Indian bloodline and break all related curses. I break any attachments to family superstitions and idolatries, ungodly beliefs, wives tales, luck charms, and rhyme curses in Jesus' name.

Thank you, Jesus, that Your word says, "Cursed is the one who hangs on the tree." You took our curses, and You took our sins, so that we can have life more abundantly, and we praise you for it. I receive by faith now all generational sins and all generational curses are broken by the blood of the Lamb, in Jesus' Name. Amen.



## Prayer to Break Ungodly Soul Ties

Father, in the name of Jesus, I submit my soul, my desires, my will, and my emotions to the Holy Spirit and Your Word. I confess as sin all of my sexual relationships before marriage and any sexual relationships outside of marriage. I confess as sin all ungodly relationships involving any part of me, whether spirit, soul, or body.

Father, I thank You for giving me the keys of Your kingdom and the keys of spiritual authority. What I bind is bound, and what I loose is loosed (**Matthew 16:19**). I ask You to loosen from me all soul ties to past sexual partners and ungodly relationships in Jesus' name. Please uproot all tentacles of sexual bondage, emotional longings, dependencies, vain imaginations, enslaving thoughts, and thought patterns. I bind, renounce, and resist any evil spirits that have been reinforced through those soul ties or may have been transferred to me through ungodly associations or promiscuity.

I also repent of the sin of the idolatry attached to my pursuit of perversion. **Jeremiah 2:20-25** says that my Heavenly Father's perception of this perversion that I have been pursuing is that I will not serve him, and I love foreign gods, and I must go after them. Therefore, I repent of the sin of this idolatry, and I apply the blood of Jesus to it now.

I submit to the Lord Jesus Christ and to His Word that tells me that I must forgive so that I will be forgiven. I repent of the sin of unforgiveness and judgment toward the people who have violated me sexually due to incest, molestation, or rape. I choose to forgive and bless them, and I break any soul tie attachments to these people in Jesus' name.

Please cleanse my soul with Your blood, renew my mind, and help me to forget all illicit unions so that I am free to give myself, body, soul, and spirit, totally to You. Father, I receive Your forgiveness for all past sins of ungodly soul ties and unrighteous sexual activity. I believe that by Your grace, I am forgiven. Thank You for remembering my sins no more and for cleansing me from all unrighteousness. I commit myself totally to You. By Your grace, please keep me holy in my spirit, soul, and body, as I choose to renew my mind in Christ (**Romans 12:1-2**).

In the Name of Jesus, I pray. Amen.



## Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments

Be sure you have accepted Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior.

Pray the “My Blood Covenant Salvation Prayer” before beginning this Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments.

Take time to meditate on the authority of your personal blood covenant of salvation through the finished work of Jesus Christ on the Cross and His shed blood. Jesus died for you, was buried, and rose again on the third day.

Jesus has won the victory for you.

Begin to bind specific spirits associated with Freemasonry:

“In the name of Jesus, I bind spirits of death, antichrist, deception, lust, sadism and sadistic tendencies, calamity, the spirit of satan, all spirits of lies, domination, manipulation, consumption, witchcraft, control, and all jezebel spirits, in the Name of Jesus.”

As you begin to pray the following Prayer to Break Masonic Curses and Attachments, it is vitally important to pray through each degree with the appropriate prayer.

Do not abbreviate any portion of this Prayer. Take no shortcuts.

Pray Exactly as Written	Degree of Masonry	Check off as completed
For 1st degree only, say, “I bind and cancel the cable toe, hoodwink, and spirit of Shiva, in Jesus’ Name.”	1st degree	
On each degree, from the 1 <sup>st</sup> through 27 <sup>th</sup> , repeat: “I bind and break the power of the spirits of the ____ degree mason and loose them from me and cast them far beneath me. I cancel the oaths and curses as if they had never been spoken. I loose from me all the collars and aprons and regalia, in Jesus’ Name.	2 <sup>nd</sup> degree	
	3 <sup>rd</sup> degree	
	4 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	5 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	6 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	7 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	8 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	9 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	10 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	11 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	12 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	13 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	14 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	15 <sup>th</sup> degree	

	16 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	17 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	18 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	19 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	20 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	21 <sup>st</sup> degree	
	22 <sup>nd</sup> degree	
	23 <sup>rd</sup> degree	
	24 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	25 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	26 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	27 <sup>th</sup> degree	
<p><b>On each degree, from the 28<sup>th</sup> through the 33<sup>rd</sup>, repeat:</b>                  “I bind and break the power of the spirit of witchcraft, and I bind and break the power of the spirits of the ____ degree mason and loose them from me and cast them far beneath me. I cancel the oaths and curses as if they had never been spoken. I loose from me all the collars, aprons and regalia in Jesus’ Name.”</p>	28 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	29 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	30 <sup>th</sup> degree	
	31 <sup>st</sup> degree	
	32 <sup>nd</sup> degree	
	33 <sup>rd</sup> degree	

## **Prayer for Release of Bitter Root Judgment and Expectancy**

Dear Heavenly Father: In the Name of Jesus, I repent for the sin of judging Your creation. I have judged and condemned others, although I am not a righteous judge and have no right to judge anyone.

Jesus committed no sin, and was righteous, but He judged no one.

Jesus entrusted Himself to You, the One who judges righteously.

I now entrust myself to You. Please forgive me for this sin of judging and condemning others. I now bless those who I have judged. I bless those I have accused. I bless those who hate me and have cursed or abused me. I break the power of the spiritual law of sowing and reaping.

I forgive, release, and bless them. I ask You to bless them and give them what they need. With this change in me comes a new expectation of reaping blessings, as opposed to reaping curses. When I “sow” differently, I will “reap” differently.

I now intend to sow blessings into my life by blessing those people who have despitely used me, in Jesus’s Name.

Thank You, Lord, for forgiving me and helping me to forgive others. I ask these things in the Name of Jesus Christ.

### **SCRIPTURES**

**“Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows.” Gal. 6:7**

**“Do not judge, or you too will be judged. For in the same way you judge others, you will be judged, and with the measure you use, it will be measured to you.”**

**Matt. 7:1-2**

**“See to it that no one misses the grace of God and that no bitter root grows up to cause trouble and defile many.” Heb.12:15**

**“Honor your father and your mother, as the Lord your God has commanded you, so that you may live long and that it may go well with you in the land the Lord your God is giving you.” Deut. 5:16**

**“Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive and you will be forgiven. Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you.” Luke 6:37-38**

**“You, therefore, have no excuse, you who pass judgment on someone else, for at whatever point you judge the other, you are condemning yourself, because you who pass judgment do the same things.” Romans 2:1**

**“This is what the Lord says—the Holy One of Israel, and its Maker: Concerning things to come, do you question me about my children, or give me orders about the work of my hands?” Isaiah 45:11**

### **Prayer of repentance of personal sin**

Dear Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I repent of all personal sin in my life. I ask You to forgive me and cleanse me. Some areas of sin I know; other areas of sin I do not recognize. But Your Word promises You are faithful and just to forgive all our sins and purify us from all unrighteousness.

I ask You to reveal all areas of personal sin, known and unknown, so I may more deeply repent. Your sheep hear Your voice. You will speak to my heart and mind, and I will hear You.

If there are areas in which I am perishing for a lack of knowledge, I ask You to reveal Your truth to me. In Jesus' Name,

I will not reject Your truth.

I specifically repent of anger, pride, perversion, idolatry, addiction, greed, fear, control, manipulation, judgment, accusation, gossip (here insert area of specific sin or sins, such as fear of lack, fear of rejection, fear of failure, fear of success, etc.) Convict me of my sin, O God, so I may see my sin and repent to the depths of my soul. There is no righteousness in me on my own, but I am made righteous by the Blood of Jesus. Your Word promises that as we repent, we step into the righteousness of Jesus Christ. Your mercy is great toward me, and You will freely pardon.

As far as the east is from the west, so far have You removed my transgressions from me.

By Your Holy Spirit, empower me to overcome personal sin in my life. I confess I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me. The prayer of a righteous person will avail much. Show me Your ways, that I may know You more and walk in Your ways all the days of my life, in Jesus' Name.



## **Prayer to Release and Remove Ungodly Thought Processes, Mindsets, Devices, Defense Mechanisms, and Wrong or Unbiblical Reactions**

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_ ask You to forgive me for the sin of failing to cast my cares upon You because I did not know how to cast my cares upon You. There have been times in my life when I suffered from a lack of knowledge of knowing how to handle life's situations, difficulties, decisions, traumas, and not casting my cares upon Jesus as Your Word says to do. I confess I have used ungodly thought processes, mindsets, devices, defense mechanisms, and wrong or unbiblical reactions. I confess that I sought to handle and control my own problems in my own ways. I devised methods and systems for my self-preservation. Now, I choose to ask You, Lord, to gather and remove the devices I have created and used to get through life's difficult circumstances. I repent for the control I used in creating these devices instead of trusting in You. I release all control, anger, revenge, unforgiveness, and judgments, and all altered states of mind into which I entered to handle trauma in my life. I relinquish my self-preservation, and

I trust You for my life and choices.

I release to You all trauma, known and unknown. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondage, enslaving thought patterns, and dependencies in the name of Jesus Christ. I now purpose in my heart not to reenter these altered states of mind, devices, and mindsets that I have become accustomed to using.

I pray in the name of Jesus that You give me the renewal of mind to recognize these devices when they reappear due to life's circumstances. I release to You all disappointment, bitterness, and resentment about my past. I choose to renew my mind through the ongoing study of Your Word. I choose Your truth instead of altered states of mind that have caused me to revisit painful feelings or paralyze and distort my response to abuse or other behavior patterns toward me.

So, I speak to all altered states of mind, ungodly thought processes, mindsets, defense mechanisms, devices, and conditioned reactions. I command all such devices to align themselves with the Word of God and release their power over me, my mind, my emotions, my personality, and align with my will in the name of Jesus Christ. I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deut. 28:13**) to have Jesus Christ and Your Holy Spirit come into me and restore my soul. I forgive, release, and bless everyone who has hurt, abused, or misled me. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people. I ask You to bless them and give them what they need. Please bring me into a place where I am fully restored and made whole in spirit, soul, and body. I ask You to renew my mind so that I will not return to these old ways of thinking. I thank You for teaching me to take captive every thought to make it obedient to Jesus Christ (**2 Corinthians 10:5**). I ask You to give me the renewed ability to maintain this fresh way of thinking for my new godly lifestyle.

According to James 1, I can ask You, Lord, for wisdom, and You will give generously to all without finding fault. I ask that You give me the wisdom to maintain godly thought processes in this new season of my life and not return to the old, ungodly thought processes.

I desire that all of me be able to worship You in spirit and truth (**John 4:23-24**). I desire to worship You with a sound mind, undivided heart, and clarity. I thank You and ask these things in the name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

## Prayer to Break Word Curses

Dear Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus, I take the authority I have received through my blood covenant of salvation by accepting Jesus as my Lord and Savior.

I bind and break the power of all spells, curses, and incantations spoken over my life from any source, including my family, church relationships, work relationships, friends, enemies, known demonic sources, strategies of the enemy using any sources, and all word curses from known or unknown sources.

I break the power of these curses and declare their functions null and void.

I speak the mighty Name of Jesus Christ over these evil words. The Name of Jesus Christ is above every name. His Word is above every word. His power is above every other power or principality. I pray His Word over anyone who has knowingly or unknowingly cursed or abused me. And I pray, heavenly Father, that you bless them and give them what they need, in Jesus' Name.

I thank You, Lord, that You have the ability to hear the curse and turn it into a blessing. Amen.



## Prayer to Break Territorial Strongholds

(Especially good for missionaries)

For Missionaries traveling and entering territorial strongholds in countries such as China, India, the Middle East, or Africa, especially if entering mausoleums, temples, shrines, or other places of heathen worship. Cover yourself with a prayer such as the following:

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I take the authority I have received through my blood covenant of salvation by accepting Jesus Christ as my Lord and Savior. I thank You for teaching us our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms (Ephesians 6:12).

I bind and break the power of any influence of territorial strongholds that may attempt to attach themselves to me as I embark on a journey to serve the Most High God.

I bind and break the power of any spell, curse, or incantation from the spiritual realm empowered by the idolatrous and vain worship of buddha, hindu gods, krishna, allah, mohammed, local deities, ancestor worship, necromancy, animism, voodoo, witchcraft, idols made with hands, or other false gods. I declare the power of all such forces aligned against me to be null & void.

I bind and break the power of any influence of territorial strongholds that have become attached to me due to my service in ministry.

I bind and break the power of any influence of territorial strongholds over the areas in which I travel, in which I serve in ministry, and in which I reside.

From satan to the prince of Persia to the least of the territorial spirits, I speak the mighty name of Jesus Christ over them.

I bind and break the power and influence of these territorial strongholds, and call their function null and void, in the name of Jesus Christ.

I thank You that he who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will rest in the shadow of the Almighty (Psalm 91). The name of the Lord is a strong tower; the righteous run to it and are safe (**Proverbs 18:10**). And a curse without cause will not come to rest on me (**Proverbs 26:2**).

I thank You that no weapon formed against me will prosper, and I will refute every tongue that accuses me. I thank You this is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and this is our vindication from You (**Isaiah 54:17**). Thank you, Jesus, for the power of Your name.



## **Prayer of Repentance for Prior Involvement in any Other Religion or Spiritual Practice or Teaching**

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I come before You. I praise You for making a way for the forgiveness of my sins. I acknowledge that Your Word requires that I repent and ask forgiveness for my sins, in Jesus' Name.

I acknowledge Jesus Christ is the Lamb of God, slain for the remission of my sins and the sins of the world. I acknowledge Jesus Christ is the Son of the Living God. I believe He was born of a virgin, lived a sinless life, suffered and died on the cross, was buried, and rose again.

He ascended into heaven, where He sits by His Father.

Under my Blood Covenant of Salvation, through the acceptance of Jesus Christ as my Lord and Savior, I repent of the sin of believing any teaching that does not line up with the Holy Bible, the Word of God.

The Scriptures say Jesus Christ became the Word of God (**John 1:14; Revelation 19:13**). Therefore, I repent of believing anti-christ teachings and entertaining anti-christ and unbiblical thoughts.

With the authority I have in my Blood Covenant of Salvation with Jesus Christ, I break the power of all spoken or written oaths, curses, vows, decrees, chants, blood sacrifices, and rituals.

I repent of the sin of receiving or aligning with these anti-christ oaths, curses, vows, or decrees. I repent of the sin of participating in any anti-christ chants, blood sacrifices, or rituals of any description.

I repent of the sin of receiving any anti-christ attachments to my mind, intellect, heart, feelings, and emotions.

I repent of the sin of receiving and agreeing with unbiblical principles, teachings, and spiritual deceptions. I acknowledge these have caused attacks on my physical body, mental wellbeing, relationships, and finances. I bind and break the power of all of these ungodly attachments in the mighty Name of Jesus.

The Word tells me I am to forgive and bless those who persecute or spitefully use me, as Jesus forgave and blessed. (**I Peter 2:21-23; Matthew 5:44**). I repent of the sins of anger, unforgiveness, and judgment toward anyone who has misled or misguided me in any way, in the Name and Blood of Jesus Christ. I pray that you bless them and open their eyes to your truth. Thank You, Heavenly Father, that through my acceptance of Jesus Christ as my Lord and Savior, and my acknowledgement that He is the only Way to You, I become an heir to the promises of Abraham (**Galatians 3:29**).

I stand in faith and believe that all Your promises are Yes and Amen, through Jesus Christ (**II Corinthians 1:20**). Amen.

## Prayer for Military

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus Christ, I pray in the authority I have received through my blood covenant of salvation by accepting Jesus Christ as my Lord & Savior.

Lord, I ask for Your mercy & protection as I travel in obedience to orders during my service in the Military. I acknowledge & repent of my sins. I ask You to forgive me & wash away my sin by the shed Blood of Jesus. Your Word says as I confess & repent of my sins, You are faithful & just to forgive me & purify me from all unrighteousness (**I John 1:9**). This causes my prayers to be righteous, powerful, & effective (**James 5:16**).

I bind & break the power of every influence of territorial strongholds that have attached or seek to attach themselves to me as I serve in the Military. I bind & break the power of every influence & assignment from territorial strongholds & other demonic powers as I travel from place to place during training & tours of duty, & embark on every change of assignment & change of residence. I call the function of each of these territorial strongholds & demonic powers to be null & void.

In the Name of Jesus, I bind & break the power of the devil, who was a murderer from the beginning and is a liar and the father of lies (**John 8:44**). I bind & break the power of every such assignment of the devil that would cause or seek to cause physical injury, mental torment, or death to me. I bind & break every assignment of calamity, destruction, sudden death, & suicide by any person. I bind every lying tongue that would persuade a person to commit suicide. I call the function of every such demonic assignment null & void, in the mighty Name of Jesus.

I bind & break the power of the enemy to steal the Lord's call on my life or rob me of the blessings of His covenant promises, including health & a full life span (**Exodus 23:25-26**). Jesus stated, "The thief comes only to steal & kill & destroy; I have come that they may have life, & have it to the full." (**John 10:10**). Thank You, Jesus, for health and a full life span.

LORD, (you) are a shield around me, my glory, the One who lifts my head high. I call out to the LORD, & he answers me from his holy mountain. I lie down & sleep; I wake again, because the LORD sustains me. I will not fear though tens of thousands assail me on every side. Arise, LORD! Deliver me, my God! Strike all my enemies on the jaw; break the teeth of the wicked. From the LORD comes deliverance. May your blessing be on your people. (**Psalms 3**).

Lord, You know when I sit & when I rise; You discern my going out & my lying down; You are familiar with all my ways (**Psalms 139:2-3**). You will never leave or forsake me. (**Deut.31:6; Hebrews 13:5**)

Lord, thank you for teaching us to put on the full armor of God (**Ephesians 6:10-18**). I stand strong in the Lord & Your mighty power. I put on the full armor of God, so I can take my stand against the devil's schemes. For our struggles are not against flesh & blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world & against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms. Therefore I put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, I may be able to stand my ground, & after I have done everything, to stand. I stand firm then, with the belt of truth buckled around my waist, with

the breastplate of righteousness in place, & with my feet fitted with the readiness that comes from the gospel of peace. In addition to all this, I take up the shield of faith, with which I can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the evil one. I take the helmet of salvation & the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God. And I pray in the Spirit on all occasions with all kinds of prayers & requests. With this in mind, I am alert & always keep on praying for all of Your people.

Thank You, Lord, for teaching me to pray & trust You for protection for my body, soul & spirit (**1Thess.5:23**). I thank You that no weapon formed against me will prosper (**Isaiah 54:17**).

In the mighty Name of Jesus Christ, I bind & break the power of every spell, curse, blasphemy, & incantation from the spiritual realm empowered by the idolatrous & vain worship of allah, mohammed, buddha, any hindu deities, local deities on any continent, ancestor worship, necromancy, animism, voodoo, witchcraft, idols made with hands, or any other false gods. Further, I declare the power of all such spiritual forces aligned against me to be null & void.

I declare I will dwell in the shelter of the most High & rest in the shadow of the Almighty. In the mighty Name of Jesus, I declare I will not fear for the terror by night, the arrow that flies by day, the pestilence that stalks in the darkness, nor the plague that destroys at midday. I will say, "The Lord is my refuge," and I will make the Most High my dwelling, & no harm will overtake me, no disaster will come near my tent (**Psalms 91:1-10**).

I declare null & void the assignment of post-traumatic stress disorder against me & all military personnel. I declare the threefold cord of fear/anxiety & trauma & torment will not destroy us. I bind & break the power of all traumatic & stressful experiences of warfare. In the mighty Name of Jesus, the Prince of Peace, I speak His peace, "And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts & your minds in Christ Jesus." (**Philippians 4:7**).

Lord, I ask You for the continuing ability to cast my daily cares upon You, as You direct me to do: "casting all your cares [all your anxieties, all your worries, & all your concerns, once & for all] on Him, for He cares about you [with deepest affection, & watches over you very carefully]" **I Peter 5:7** (Amplified).

In the Name of Jesus, I declare these attacks will not destroy or harm my body, emotions, mind, or will. The enemy's schemes for evil, terror, & ongoing torment in my life, I declare to be impotent before the Lord God Almighty in Heaven above. Lord, I stand on Your Word, which promises "For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and love, and a sound mind." (**2 Timothy 1:7 KJV**). I ask these things in the Name of my Savior, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, the Messiah of Israel.

## Prayer to Release Alters

Heavenly Father, in the Name of Jesus, I \_\_\_\_\_, pray forgiveness for the sin of creating alters. There have been times in my life when I suffered from the lack of knowledge. I now realize these alters have been trying to do Your job in my life, which would be to comfort, protect, and counsel me.

I repent for the sin of failing to cast my cares on Jesus, as the Word says to do. I repent for the sin of creating alters, which are idols that say, "I can handle my own problems." So, I speak to all alters I have created, and I say to them:

"Thank you for the job that you have done. You were there when I needed you. I now release you from me and from your function.

I say you will leave me and go to be with Jesus." I now choose to trust Jesus in these areas where the alters have been functioning and in all areas of my life. I bind and break the power of all soul tie attachments, longings, emotional bondages, enslaving thought patterns, familiarities, and dependencies to these alters in the Name of Jesus.

I desire as the head and not the tail (**Deuteronomy 28:13**) to have Jesus and the Holy Spirit come and fill all places within me where alters are.

I forgive, release, and bless anyone who has caused me to create alters. I repent and ask forgiveness for the sin of carrying any unforgiveness or judgment toward these people, and I expect the alters to do the same thing and align with my will. I ask these things in the mighty Name of Jesus. Amen.

**PLEASE NOTE: This prayer is intended to be used when you receive ministry from Bob Lucy Ministries or another experienced Christian minister. It is not intended to be prayed by you alone in advance of your ministry appointment.**

**This prayer will be used during your actual ministry appointment, when there are other Christians praying for you in a safe and secure environment. This prayer is for ministry purposes only. If you have questions about the meaning or purpose of this prayer, please contact Bob Lucy.**



## **Prayer to Remove Alters**

Heavenly Father, in the name of Jesus Christ, I \_\_\_\_\_, come before You, and speak as the head and not the tail, and I say that all alters I have created will become redeemed by the blood of the Lamb, just as I have.

These alters will accept Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior, just as I have. I repent of the sin of creating alters and failing to cast my cares on Jesus, as the Word says. So I say now that these alters, (name them)\_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, and all remaining spoken and unspoken alters, will release all their rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, to my will, and to my emotions. And I ask You, Lord Jesus, to come and take these alters away with You, to a place where there is no fear, abuse, rejection, lies, or performance, and they leave with You now. Thank You, Jesus.

**PLEASE NOTE: This prayer is intended to be used when you receive ministry from Bob Lucy Ministries or another experienced Christian minister. It is not intended to be prayed by you alone in advance of your ministry appointment.**

**This prayer will be used during your actual ministry appointment, when there are other Christians praying for you in a safe and secure environment. This prayer is for ministry purposes only. If you have questions about the meaning or purpose of this prayer, please contact Bob Lucy.**



## Prayer to Remove Demonic

I, \_\_\_\_\_ (name), speak as the head and not the tail. I command the spirit of satan, the strongest spirit attached to my generational line, the soul tie realm, all removed alters, any personal sin, masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets, or beliefs to speak for and pull to itself the following:

- all attached heads of the spirit of satan;
- all attached heads of the spirit of witchcraft, with all heads of mind control;
- all heads of python with all python eggs;
- all Indian heads of witchcraft;
- all Jezebel and Ahab heads of witchcraft with all attached infirmities, mental and physical;
- all heads of rejection;
- all heads of fear;
- all heads of perversion;
- all heads of idolatry;
- all heads of leviathan (pride – **Job 41:1-34**) with all leviathan eggs; and all heads of murder.

I command the spirit of satan, in the name of Jesus, to speak for and pull to itself all generational line, soul tie realm, removed alters, personal sin, Masonic attachments, and any ungodly thought processes, judgments, mindsets or beliefs, spirits, strongmen, and families, spoken and unspoken.

In the name of Jesus Christ, I serve notice to the spirit of satan. I say that if any spirits attached to me try to deceive me and stay, that the warring angels will station them at the feet of Jesus to worship Him as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

I command the spirit of satan to release all its rights to me, to my mind, to my flesh, to my personality, to my spirit, my emotions, and my will. I command it to submit to the Word of God and the Blood of the Lamb. I command it to leave and go to the pit now!

I speak these things in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

**PLEASE NOTE: This prayer is intended to be used when you receive ministry from Bob Lucy Ministries or another experienced Christian minister. It is not intended to be prayed by you alone in advance of your ministry appointment.**

**This prayer will be used during your actual ministry appointment, when there are other Christians praying for you in a safe and secure environment. This prayer is for ministry purposes only. If you have questions about the meaning or purpose of this prayer, please contact Bob Lucy.**

© 2021 by Bob Lucy, PO Box 58, Coles Point, VA 22442. Permission is granted to copy and distribute this material as long as acknowledgement is included on all copies. It shall not be permitted to modify any content without the express, written permission of Bob Lucy.



<b>PERSONAL INFORMATION WORKSHEET AND CONSENT FORM</b>			
<b>You are required to complete and return this form before receiving ministry of deliverance and/or before assisting on deliverance teams</b>			
Name:		Date:	
Street address:			
City:		State:	Zip:
Home Phone:		Work Phone:	
Cell Phone:		E-mail address:	
Marital status: <input type="checkbox"/> Never married <input type="checkbox"/> Married <input type="checkbox"/> Separated <input type="checkbox"/> Divorced <input type="checkbox"/> Widowed			
Date of birth:   /   /   Age:			Gender: <input type="checkbox"/> Male <input type="checkbox"/> Female
Have you accepted Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Do you believe Jesus Christ was conceived of the Holy Spirit and born of the Virgin Mary? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Do you believe Jesus Christ was crucified and died, was buried, rose again on the third day and is now seated at the right hand of the Father in heaven? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Do you believe that the Blood of the Lamb is able to take away all sin? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Church you attend:			
Have you ever fasted and prayed? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Do you maintain a devotional life? (read the Word, pray regularly) <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Are you willing to submit yourself humbly to God? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No			
Will you be completely honest? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No		Will you confess all known sins? <input type="checkbox"/> Yes <input type="checkbox"/> No	
<p>Will you renounce any involvement with any area that may block your deliverance?   <input type="checkbox"/> Yes   <input type="checkbox"/> No</p> <p><b>These include:</b></p> <p><i>DOMINATING SPIRIT</i> – one’s domination over another, i.e., husband over wife, friend, family member, parent. One person’s power of control over another is in essence <i>witchcraft</i>.</p> <p><i>OCCULT or CULT INVOLVEMENT</i> – ouija boards, fortune tellers, palm readers, tarot cards, horoscopes, hypnosis, magic (white or black), séances, witchcraft, satanism, spiritism, false doctrines, heresies, cults, psychic, new age, rebellion (which is in essence <i>witchcraft</i>).</p> <p><i>HOMOSEXUALITY</i> – even if you have only been approached, but not actually involved in homosexual activity, it may be tormenting you.</p> <p><i>ABORTION</i> – Confessed as murder</p> <p><i>AN UNFORGIVING SPIRIT</i> – forgive all, hold no grudges (including forgiving yourself &amp; God). Will to forgive. If this is not done, God cannot forgive or deliver you. Matthew 18:23-35. Where possible and practical, verbal apology and restitution are both necessary.</p>			

<b>Describe your family background in the following areas:</b>	
Parents	
Relationship with parents	
Parents' vocation	
Self-image	
Social status (average, below, above)	
Brothers' / sisters' relationship	
Your vocation	
<b>Describe your education and background in the following areas:</b>	
School (high school, college, trade, etc.)	
Sports	
Special training	
Talents (hobbies)	
Military Service (branch)	

<b>Describe your medical history in the following areas:</b>	
Diseases	
Extended fever	
Treatment for mental illness	
<b>Describe your spiritual life in the following areas:</b>	
Saved	
Baptized in water	
Baptized in the Holy Spirit	
Involved in ministry	
Daily devotions	
Tithe	

<b>AREAS OF INVOLVEMENT</b>	
<b>Check the box and put approximate dates or any brief explanation which you believe will assist the team leader</b>	
<b><i>Drugs</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> LSD	<input type="checkbox"/> Speed
<input type="checkbox"/> Uppers	<input type="checkbox"/> Marijuana
<input type="checkbox"/> Downers	<input type="checkbox"/> Cocaine
<input type="checkbox"/> Prescription	<input type="checkbox"/> Crack
<input type="checkbox"/> Other	
<b><i>Witchcraft</i></b>	

<input type="checkbox"/> Ouija Boards	<input type="checkbox"/> Tarot Cards
<input type="checkbox"/> Séances	<input type="checkbox"/> 8 Ball
<input type="checkbox"/> Palm Readers	<input type="checkbox"/> Warlock
<input type="checkbox"/> Water Witching	<input type="checkbox"/> Witch
<input type="checkbox"/> Tea Leaves	<input type="checkbox"/> Hypnosis
<input type="checkbox"/> Horoscopes	<input type="checkbox"/> Fortune-Teller
<input type="checkbox"/> Crystal Balls	<input type="checkbox"/> Rebellion
<input type="checkbox"/> White Magic	<input type="checkbox"/> Black Magic
<input type="checkbox"/> Other:	

***Philosophical, Mental, Supernatural***

<input type="checkbox"/> Yoga	<input type="checkbox"/> Medium
<input type="checkbox"/> Levitation	<input type="checkbox"/> Necromancer
<input type="checkbox"/> Clairvoyance	<input type="checkbox"/> Karate-judo
<input type="checkbox"/> Mind Control	<input type="checkbox"/> ESP
<input type="checkbox"/> Mental Telepathy	<input type="checkbox"/> Ventriloquism
<input type="checkbox"/> Voodoo spells	<input type="checkbox"/> Psychics
<input type="checkbox"/> Transcendental mediation	
<input type="checkbox"/> Other:	

***Addictions***

<input type="checkbox"/> Food	<input type="checkbox"/> Smoking
<input type="checkbox"/> Sex	<input type="checkbox"/> Diet pills
<input type="checkbox"/> Alcohol	<input type="checkbox"/> Sleep aids
<input type="checkbox"/> Drugs	<input type="checkbox"/> Gambling
<input type="checkbox"/> Other:	

***Fear and Anxiety***

<input type="checkbox"/> Fear	<input type="checkbox"/> Anxiety
<input type="checkbox"/> Nightmares	<input type="checkbox"/> Untrust
<input type="checkbox"/> Doubt	<input type="checkbox"/> Introvert
<input type="checkbox"/> Stress	<input type="checkbox"/> Fear of man

**AREAS OF INVOLVEMENT *(Continued)***

**Check the box and put approximate dates or any brief explanation which you believe will assist the team leader**

***Anger and Envy***

<input type="checkbox"/> Anger	<input type="checkbox"/> Envy
<input type="checkbox"/> Rage	<input type="checkbox"/> Extreme competition

<input type="checkbox"/> Revenge	
<b><i>Sorrow and Grief</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> Self-pity	<input type="checkbox"/> Insomnia
<input type="checkbox"/> Excessive mourning	<input type="checkbox"/> Grief
<input type="checkbox"/> Sorrow	
<b><i>Pride and Control</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> Pride	<input type="checkbox"/> Dictatorial
<input type="checkbox"/> Arrogance	<input type="checkbox"/> Controlling
<input type="checkbox"/> Boastful	<input type="checkbox"/> Domineering
<input type="checkbox"/> Bragging	<input type="checkbox"/> Obstinate
<input type="checkbox"/> Idleness	<input type="checkbox"/> Contentious
<input type="checkbox"/> Overeating	
<b><i>New Age</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> New Age	<input type="checkbox"/> Unteachable
<input type="checkbox"/> Unsubmissive	<input type="checkbox"/> Defensive
<input type="checkbox"/> Argumentative	
<b><i>Member of any Secret Society</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> Knights Of Columbus	<input type="checkbox"/> Fraternity
<input type="checkbox"/> Masonic Order	<input type="checkbox"/> Sorority
<input type="checkbox"/> Order Of The Arrow	<input type="checkbox"/> Eastern Star
<input type="checkbox"/> Rainbow Girls	<input type="checkbox"/> Job's Daughters
<input type="checkbox"/> KKK	<input type="checkbox"/> DeMolay
<b><i>Member of any Religious Cult</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> Mormon	<input type="checkbox"/> Buddhism
<input type="checkbox"/> Christian Scientist	<input type="checkbox"/> The Way International
<input type="checkbox"/> Scientology	<input type="checkbox"/> Hari Krishna
<input type="checkbox"/> Moonies	<input type="checkbox"/> Jehovah's Witness
<b><i>Member of any Religious Group which denies the Atonement, Deity of Christ,</i></b>	
<input type="checkbox"/> Zen	<input type="checkbox"/> Muslim
<input type="checkbox"/> Satanism	<input type="checkbox"/> Unitarian

<b>AREAS OF INVOLVEMENT</b> <i>(Continued)</i> <b>Check the box and put approximate dates or any brief explanation                      which you believe will assist the team leader</b>	
<input type="checkbox"/>	Alcohol
<input type="checkbox"/>	Rock music
<input type="checkbox"/>	Molested / Molester
<input type="checkbox"/>	Homosexual
<input type="checkbox"/>	Fornication
<input type="checkbox"/>	Adultery
<input type="checkbox"/>	Pornography / x-rated movies / photographs
<input type="checkbox"/>	Abortion
<input type="checkbox"/>	Satan worship
<input type="checkbox"/>	Raped / rapist
<input type="checkbox"/>	Daydreaming
<input type="checkbox"/>	Gossip
<input type="checkbox"/>	Lying
<input type="checkbox"/>	Cursing
<input type="checkbox"/>	Stealing
<input type="checkbox"/>	Prostitution
<input type="checkbox"/>	Arthritis
<input type="checkbox"/>	Asthma, hay fever, allergies
<input type="checkbox"/>	Critical spirit
<input type="checkbox"/>	Perfectionist
<input type="checkbox"/>	Stubbornness
<input type="checkbox"/>	Suicidal
<input type="checkbox"/>	Mental illness
<input type="checkbox"/>	Chronic ear problems
<input type="checkbox"/>	Idolatry
<input type="checkbox"/>	Love of money
<input type="checkbox"/>	Superstitions
<input type="checkbox"/>	Rejection
<input type="checkbox"/>	Depression
<input type="checkbox"/>	Near death experience (accident, medical, over-dose, etc.)
<input type="checkbox"/>	Any generational information you'd like to add

## **SUGGESTIONS ON HOW TO RECEIVE DELIVERANCE**

Is your problem demonic or is it the carnal nature? Suspect your need of deliverance only after you have gone through the normal channels of prayer, spiritual discipline, applying the Word, etc., and still don't have victory.

## **SOME REASONS WHY DELIVERANCE MAY NOT BE REALIZED**

Lack of true repentance - repentance means a change of attitude and behavior

Failure to confess sins - I John 1:9; James 5:16

Failure to forgive others - Mark 11:25, 26; Matthew 18:21-35

Failure to break with the occult - Acts 19:13-19

Unwillingness to be completely honest with God

## **WHAT MAY I DO TO AID IN MY DELIVERANCE?**

Hate sin. YOU must mean business – your part is important.

Want complete deliverance of ALL spirits.

Repent and confess your sins.

Start renouncing the spirits, binding them yourself, before coming for deliverance

Rid your surroundings, including your home, office, and car of all reminders including charms, books, records, videos, etc. and alter your lifestyle to avoid friends and places which serve as reminders. Pray and fast as much as you can but for at least one meal.

Call on the Name of Jesus. Joel 2:32

## **HOW MAY I COOPERATE WITH THE PEOPLE PRAYING FOR ME?**

Be completely honest. Workers are unshockable and trustworthy.

Humble yourself and acknowledge your need for help.

Repent and confess your sins.

Don't pray for yourself while the workers are praying for you. Words can hinder the exit of the demons.

Don't hold back your physical reactions. The Greek word for spirit is "PNEUMA." This is also the word for "breath". Most evil spirits will be expelled via your mouth. On the other hand, there may be no physical reactions.

## **WILL THESE DEMON SPIRITS TRY TO RETURN?**

According to Matthew 12:43-45 they will TRY to return. You must command them to leave you alone in the Name of Jesus. As Jesus did in the temptation, come back at them with the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God. Keep your deliverance by constantly praising the Lord.

Keep your deliverance by putting on the whole armor of God. Ephesians 6:10-18 Keep your deliverance by daily applying Romans 12:1-2.

Keep your deliverance by particularly guarding against resentments, hurts, and bitterness.

**CONSENT FOR AN ADULT**

*The information contained in these personal information worksheets will be used and studied only by the Deliverance Team. This information is confidential.*

I do hereby state and affirm that I have requested personal ministry from the Deliverance Team. I hereby give my consent for the Deliverance Team to administer said personal ministry to me. I release the Deliverance Team from any and all liability of every description that may arise as a result of this ministry. I release all members of the Deliverance Team including Bob Lucy and all staff members of Bob Lucy Ministries, paid and unpaid staffers, and all volunteer workers.

Printed Name: \_\_\_\_\_

Signature: \_\_\_\_\_

Date: \_\_\_\_\_

**CONSENT FOR A MINOR**

*The information contained in the personal information worksheets will be used and studied only by the Deliverance Team. This information is confidential.*

Minor Child's Name: \_\_\_\_\_

Date of Birth: \_\_\_\_\_

Address of the Minor Child: \_\_\_\_\_

I hereby state and affirm that I am the \_\_\_\_\_ mother \_\_\_\_\_ father \_\_\_\_\_ legal guardian of the minor child named above and that I hereby give my consent for him/her to receive the personal ministry which he/she has requested from the Deliverance Team. I hereby give my consent for the Deliverance Team to administer said personal ministry to the above named Minor Child. I release the Deliverance Team from any and all liability of every description that may arise as a result of this ministry to the named Minor Child. I release all members of the Deliverance Team including Bob Lucy and all staff members of Bob Lucy Ministries, paid and unpaid staffers, and all volunteer workers.

Printed Name: \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_ Mother \_\_\_\_\_ Father \_\_\_\_\_ Legal Guardian

Signature: \_\_\_\_\_

Date: \_\_\_\_\_

I am very thankful to be allowed to share this information for the body of Christ to use. It has been a vessel that the Lord has used to see many people healed, mentally and physically. I encourage anyone who is interested in receiving freedom, healing, or even renewal of the mind to study this book and learn the Biblical principles of legal rights. This empowers us to stand boldly, to take the kingdom by force (Matthew 11:12). As we humbly walk in repentance and service to the King, He allows us to move mightily for His sake. This process allows us to become a vessel for Christ to move through us. (Gal 2:20a)

If anyone has difficulty with self-ministry and needs help, I am available to counsel, share, teach, and assist with most ministry needs. I am able to be contacted on my website at <http://www.boblucyministries.org>. I am also available for group teachings, seminars, individual counsel, and phone ministry. My heart is to teach the body of Christ on the anointing of deliverance, and teaching Biblical principles on legal rights the enemy has to steal from us our covenant promises.

The Lord gave me a simple teaching, "You can resist the devil all you want so he will flee, but if he has a right to be there he will not leave!" This book is my best attempt at teaching fellow believers in Jesus Christ how to achieve and maintain personal freedom, physical and mental healing, deliverance, and renewal of the mind.

Sincerely, Bob Lucy

